THE WORLD displayed;

OR, A

CURIOUS COLLECTION

OF

VOYAGES and TRAVELS,

SELECTED FROM

The WRITERS of all NATIONS.

IN WHICH THE

CONJECTURES and INTERPOLATIONS

OF

Several vain *Editors* and *Tranſlators* are expunged,

Every Relation is made conciſe and plain,

AND

The DIVISIONS of *Countries* and *Kingdoms* are clearly and diſtinctly noted.

Illuſtrated and Embelliſhed

With Variety of MAPS and PRINTS by the beſt HANDS.

THE THIRD EDITION, CORRECTED.

VOL. III.

LONDON:

Printed for NEWBERY and CARNAN, N°. 65, the North-Side of St. *Paul's Church-Yard*.

MDCCLXVIII.

BRITISH MUSEUM

CONTENTS

OF THE

THIRD VOLUME.

The Diſcovery of Golden Castile.

CHAP. I. Vaſquez Nunez de Balboa *ſends two Agents to ſollicit Succours from* James Columbus *and the Court of* Spain. *He ſubdues, and enters into an Alliance with, the Cacique* Careta; *viſits the Cacique* Comagre, *where he obtains the firſt Intelligence of the* South-Sea, *and of the Riches of* Peru. *He returns to* Santa Maria, *and, receiving ill News from* Spain, *reſolves to attempt a Diſcovery of that rich Country, in Hopes of pacifying King* Ferdinand *and his Miniſters.* P. 1

CHAP. II. Nunez *marches in order to diſcover the* South-Seas: *obtains the Friendſhip of the Cacique* Ponca: *Defeats* Quarequa; *and takes a View of the* South-Sea: *He alſo defeats the Cacique* Chiapes, *and afterwards obtains his Friendſhip: Takes a formal Poſſeſſion of the* South-Sea, *and its Coaſts and Iſlands, in Behalf of the King of* Spain; *but endeavouring to navigate a Bay, is in Danger of being loſt with* 80 *other* Spaniards. *He afterwards oppoſes* Tumaco, *a powerful Cacique; but having obliged him to retire, concludes a Peace with him, and obtains a great Quantity of Pearls and Diamonds.* P. 10

CHAP. III. Nunez *ſends another Agent to the Court of* Spain, *with a rich Preſent to the Biſhop of* Burgos, *who had before appointed* Pedrarias *Governor of* Golden Caſtile. *This*

new Governor cruelly perſecutes Nunez de Balboa, *and treats the* Indians *with the utmoſt Inhumanity, which forces them to take up Arms againſt him.* Nunez, *however, cauſes Peace to be reſtored, builds a Town on the* South-Sea, *and is at laſt beheaded.* P. 18

CHAP. IV. Pedrarias *builds the City of* Panama, *and engages in a long and unſucceſsful War with the Cacique* Urraca. *The Court of* Spain, *being at length wearied out with Complaints againſt him, ſends a new Governor, upon which he retires to* Nicaragua, *and under the form of Juſtice murders* Francis Hernandes, *who had conquered that Province.* P. 24

The Conqueſt of PERU, by FRANCIS PIZARRO.

CHAP. I. Francis Pizarro, *with the Aſſiſtance of two other Perſons, undertakes the Diſcovery of* Peru, *but meets with many Hardſhips, till at length obtaining a particular Account of the immenſe Riches of the Country of which he is in ſearch, he returns to* Panama; *but being oppoſed by the Governor, embarks for* Spain. P. 30

CHAP. II. Pizarro *arrives in* Spain, *and meets with a favourable Reception from* Charles V. *who grants him Commiſſions and Powers for purſuing his Conqueſts. He returns to* Panama, *whence he continues his Courſe to* St. Matthew's Bay, *where he attacks the defenceleſs* Indians *without Provocation, which occaſions his being diſtreſſed for want of Proviſions. He lands at* Tumbez, *in ſpite of the Inhabitants, who, being terrified at his Cannon and Horſes, fly farther into the Country, leaving behind them immenſe Riches, which are ſeized by* Pizarro, *who builds a Fort upon the Coaſt.* P. 40

CHAP. III. *An Account of the Diviſions in* Peru *at the Time of* Pizarro's *diſcovering the Kingdom.* Pizarro *ſollicited for his Aſſiſtance by the contending Parties.* Ferdinand Pizarro *and* Ferdinand Soto, *wait upon* Atabaliba *in Quality of Ambaſſadors, and meet with a favourable Reception. The Inca, attended by his Army, waits upon the* Spaniſh *General; but is inhumanly attacked, many of the Soldiers murdered in cold Blood, and himſelf taken Priſoner. He offers a Ranſom for his Life, which they accept, but afterwards baſely murder him.* P. 47

CHAP. IV. *The divided State of* Peru, *after the Inca's Death. Several* Spaniards *killed in an Ambuſh, and ſome Priſoners taken, but are ſet at Liberty, upon very generous Conditions.* Manco Capac *acknowledged Inca of* Peru. Pedro de Alverado *enters* Peru *with an Army, but is prevailed upon to retire to his Government in* Mexico. Pizarro *lays the Foundations of the Cities of* Lima *and* Truxillo. Almagro *aſſumes the Government of* Cuzco; *but is perſuaded to reſign it.* P. 66

CHAP. V. Almagro *ſets out with a powerful Army of* Spaniards *and* Peruvians *to conquer* Chili; *but loſes many of his Men, and ſuffers dreadful Hardſhips in paſſing the* Cordilleras. *He abandons* Chili *in order to take upon himſelf the Government of* Cuzco, *which is attacked by the* Indians. *The Inca diſbands his Forces and retires to the Mountains; while the City of* Cuzco *is ſurprized by* Almagro, *who gains ſeveral Advantages over* Pizarro, *but afterwards concludes a Treaty with him, which being broken by* Pizarro, *a bloody Battle is*

fought, Almagro *taken Priſoner, and afterwards tried, condemned and executed.* P. 77

CHAP. VI. *The Marquis* Pizarro *extends his Conqueſts to the South, and ſubdues the Province of* Charcas; *after which he ſends his Brother* Gonzalo, *whom he had made Governor of* Quito, *to make new Diſcoveries, who proceeds to the Eaſtward, in hopes of finding Countries ſtill richer than* Peru: *but is at length deſerted by* Orellana, *who ſails down the River of the* Amazons, *returns to the* Spaniſh *Settlements on the other Side of* America, *and obliges* Gonzalo *to return to* Quito. P. 92

CHAP. VII. Pizarro's *Cruelty to* Almagro's *Followers occaſions his being aſſaſſinated.* P. 102

CHAP. VIII. *Young* Almagro *meets with Oppoſition.* Vaca de Caſtro, *a Perſon of an excellent Character, arrives from* Spain, *with Power to ſettle the Diſputes in* Peru, *and is joined by ſeveral Officers. He comes to a Battle with* Almagro, *whom he defeats; and* Almagro *being afterwards taken Priſoner, is convicted of High-Treaſon, and executed with many of his Adherents.* P. 106

CHAP. IX. De Caſtro's *wiſe Regulations after the Suppreſſion of the Rebellion. He is ſuperſeded by* Blaſco Nunez, *who has the Title of Viceroy, and puts* De Caſtro *under an Arreſt; however, he is oppoſed by* Gonzalo Pizarro, *and impriſoned; but eſcaping, is at length killed in Battle, and* Gonzalo *acknowleaged Governor of* Peru. P. 113

CHAP. X. Pedro de la Gaſca, *a Perſon of diſtinguiſhed Virtue, is made Governor of* Peru, *with the Title of Preſident; upon which* Gon-

zalo Pizarro *every where loſes Ground; but at length defeats* Centeno, *one of* De Gaſca's *Generals, and is afterwards ruined, by rejecting* Carvajal's *Advice; for, being abandoned by his People, he ſurrenders himſelf Priſoner, and is condemned and beheaded: After which,* De Gaſca, *perplexed about the Diviſion of Lands, returns to* Spain. P. 117

The Settlement of Brasil, by the *Portugueſe*, and its ſeveral Revolutions.

Chap. I. *The Diſcovery of* Braſil *by Don* Pedro Alvarez de Cabral. *The ſmall Advantages at firſt expected from it. Some Account of the Country, and its antient Inhabitants, and the Manner in which it was firſt ſettled by the* Portugueſe. P. 125

Chap. II. *Attempts made by the* French *to ſettle a Colony in* Braſil *by the* Sieur de Villegagnon, *Capt.* Riffaut, *and* M. Rivardier, *without Succeſs.* P. 134

Chap. III. *The* Dutch *make themſelves Maſters of* Braſil; *but are driven out by the united Force of* Spain *and* Portugal. *The* Dutch, *however, being reſolved to make a freſh Attempt, ſend a large Fleet, under the Command of Admiral* Lank, *with a Body of Land Forces commanded by General* Wardenbourgh. *The Latter takes the City of* Olinda, *and all the Coaſt to the South; while Admiral* Lank *takes an Iſland called the* Sandy Receif. *Admiral* Pater *being afterwards ſent from* Holland *with a large Fleet, the* Dutch *oblige the* Portugueſe *to raiſe the Siege of* Olinda; *and this brave Admiral, with only ſix Ships, engages*

the Portugueſe *Fleet of forty-five, and comes off with Honour.* P. 141

CHAP. IV. *The ſurpriſing Succeſs of the* Dutch *againſt the united Forces of* Spain *and* Portugal, *induces the Directors of the* Weſt-India *Company to ſend Count* Maurice *of* Naſſau, *as Governor of* Braſil, *who, by his wiſe Conduct, ſettles the beſt Part of the Country.* P. 150

CHAP. V. *Count* Maurice *of* Naſſau *forms a Scheme for erecting a* Dutch *Empire in* America, *equal, if not ſuperior, to that of the* Spaniards. *General* Brewer's *Expedition to* Chili, *and its Miſcarriage, occaſioned by the ill Conduct of the* Dutch, *and the Count's being recalled.* P. 162

CHAP. VI. *The* Dutch Weſt-India *Company being now reſolved to proceed in the moſt frugal Manner, ſtrip the Country of the Troops employed in its Defence; and ſend new Governors, who leſſen the Expences of the Company, and encreaſe their immediate Profits; but neglect the Fortifications, and oppreſs the* Portugueſe *under their Subjection; upon which they take up Arms for the Recovery of their Liberties, and, after a long War, drive out the* Dutch. P. 171

CHAP. VII. *A Deſcription of the preſent State of the ſeveral Captainſhips or Provinces of* Braſil, *and their Produce; the Manner of making clayed Sugar, and an Account of the* Braſil *Tree; the principal Cities and Towns of each Province, and the Diſcovery of Gold and Diamonds in that Country.* P. 182

CHAP. VIII. *An Account of a People in* Braſil *called* Pauliſts, *with a Deſcription of the Manners of the Inhabitants in general.* P. 194

CHAP. IX. *An Account of the Vegetables, Beaſts, Birds, &c. found in* Braſil. P. 205

THE DISCOVERY OF GOLDEN CASTILE.

CHAP I.

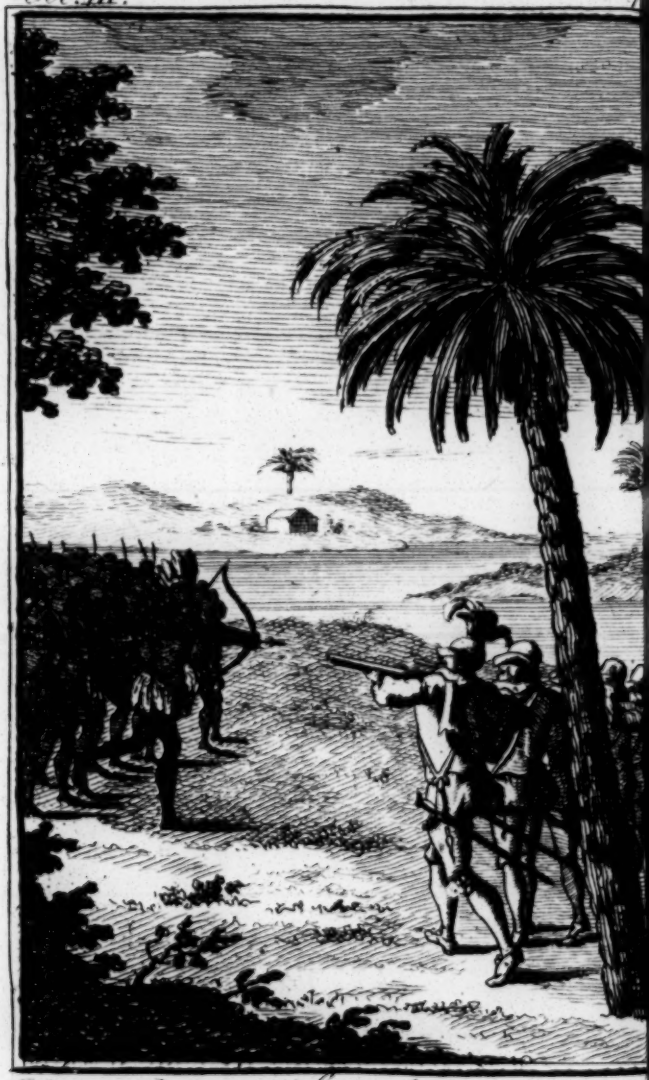
Vaſquez Nunez de Balboa *ſends two Agents to ſollicit Succours from* James Columbus *and the Court of* Spain. *He ſubdues and enters into an Alliance with the Cacique* Careta; *viſits the Cacique* Comagre, *where he obtains the firſt Intelligence of the* South Sea, *and of the Riches of* Peru. *He returns to* Santa Maria, *and, receiving ill News from* Spain, *reſolves to attempt a Diſcovery of that rich Country, in Hopes of pacifying King* Ferdinand *and his Miniſters.*

VASQUEZ NUNEZ DE BALBOA, having got the command, in the manner already related in our account of the diſcoveries from the death of *Columbus* to *Cortes*'s expedition, immediately contrived to make the best

beſt uſe of the great power he had obtained, in order to extend the diſcoveries, and acquire more gold, which he foreſaw would prove the only effectual means of ſecuring him in the poſſeſſion of the government, at which he had ſo ſtrangely arrived.

His firſt care was to ſecure thoſe ſupplies, of which the colony was in want; and for this purpoſe he ſent his friend *Valdivia* to *Hiſpanolia*, to prevail on the Governor and council to furniſh him and his people with all they wanted; and had the greater hopes of ſucceſs, as the Admiral *Diego Columbus* was then there, who he was ſenſible was diſpoſed to contribute all in his power to promote the King's ſervice. He next perſuaded the colony to ſend a perſon directly to *Spain*, to inform the court of their ſituation, and of the great probability there was of their being able to make very advantageous diſcoveries and conqueſts; and for this important employment he recommended *Zamudio*, his colleague in the magiſtracy; by which means he ſecured the ſole authority to himſelf; and at the ſame time committed the care of his concerns to one whoſe intereſts were the ſame with his own; ſince he had been as deeply engaged, in the bringing about the revolution, as himſelf; and as there was a ſmall ſhip belonging to the colony in port, he cauſed it to be fitted out as well as poſſible, in order to carry away the two deputies and his old antagoniſt *Enciſo*. But as the laſt mentioned perſon might repreſent his proceedings in a light that would be far from being to his advantage, he gave *Valdivia* a conſiderable

7 AP 53



Francis Pizarro with Six Spaniards attacke
by 400 Indians under the Command of Zemar

conſiderable quantity of gold, which he deſired him to preſent to the King's Treaſurer General at *St. Domingo*, who had a great intereſt with the *Spaniſh* miniſtry.

At this time many *Indians* reſorted to *Darien* to obſerve, whether the *Spaniards* were going away, and what were their deſigns: but to conceal their motives they carried *Indian* wheat and other proviſions to exchange for beads, knives, and other things of ſmall value, endeavouring to perſuade them to be gone, by obſerving that there was much gold and plenty of proviſions in the province of *Coyba*, which was at 30 leagues diſtance. Upon this, *Nunez de Balboa* ſent *Francis Pizarro* with ſix men to diſcover the country; who having travelled three leagues up the river, were attacked by 400 *Indians*, under the command of the Cacique *Zemaco*; but after a ſmart engagement, in which about 100 of the *Indians* were killed, the reſt were put to flight, and the *Spaniards* returned to *Darien*; but having left one of their companions behind them, *Nunez* was ſo offended that he ordered *Pizarro* to march back with a freſh detachment, which he accordingly did, and returned with him to the colony.

Nunez now ſent two brigantines for the *Spaniards* who had been left at *Nombre de Dios*. Theſe veſſels ſailing along the coaſt reached a port belonging to the Cacique of *Coyba*, where two *Spaniards*, entirely naked and painted red, came to them. Theſe and another perſon had, a year and a half before, made their eſcape from *Nicueſſa*'s ſhip to avoid the puniſhment

due for ſome crime they had committed; and putting themſelves into the hands of the Cacique *Careta*, were kindly treated; but not agreeing among themſelves, one of them, whoſe name was *Juan Alonzo*, dangerouſly wounded the other; whereupon the Cacique, admiring him for his bravery, made him commander of his forces, in a war in which he was then engaged, and would do nothing without his advice.

Theſe two men were highly acceptable to thoſe in the brigantines; they obſerved that the country abounded in gold, and that, if *Nunez* would invade it, they ſhould all obtain great riches. Upon this advice it was agreed, that one of them ſhould go to *Santa Maria*, to inform *Nunez* of the ſtate of the country; and that the other ſhould ſtay to be ſerviceable as occaſion ſhould offer.

When the brigantines returned to *Santa Maria*, *Nunez* was much pleaſed with the intelligence they brought of this rich country, and at his having *Spaniſh* interpreters, who underſtood the language of the natives; and having ſent back the brigantines, to bring away the reſt of the *Spaniards* from *Nombre de Dios*, (as they had been unable to take them all before) he choſe 130 of the braveſt of his men, who, on the return of the brigantines, ſet out with a ſufficient ſupply of arms and proviſions in ſearch of the Cacique *Careta*, who lived at 30 leagues diſtance.

The Cacique hearing of his coming, waited for him in his houſe; and *Nunez* arriving there, demanded proviſions, for his men to carry with

with him to *Darien*; but *Careta* excuſing himſelf, under the pretence of his being at war with a neighbouring Cacique, which had prevented his people's ſowing, *Nunez*, by the advice of *Juan Alonzo*, pretended to return back by the ſame way he came; but at midnight returned, and, attacking the town in three places, took the Cacique with his two wives and children priſoners; all of whom he ſent away to *Santa Maria*, after having loaded the brigantines with proviſions.

Being returned to *Darien*, *Careta* intreated *Nunez* not to keep him in captivity; promiſing, in return for his liberty, to furniſh him with proviſions, and to do him all the ſervice in his power. He offered him one of his daughters, who was very beautiful, for his wife; and deſired his aſſiſtance againſt his enemy *Ponca*, a neighbouring Cacique, in order that his own people might have leiſure to till and ſow the ground.

Nunez gladly accepted of theſe offers, and taking his daughter, kept her as his miſtreſs, behaving towards her with great affection, which highly pleaſed the *Indians*. *Careta* being now ſuffered to return, treated *Nunez* and 80 men, who accompanied him, ſo well, that they reſolved to aſſiſt him in his wars; which *Ponca* no ſooner heard, than he fled to the mountains; and the *Spaniards* entering his country, ſeized ſome proviſions, and a conſiderable quantity of gold.

Careta ſoon after informed his gueſts, that he had another neighbour more powerful than

Ponca, whoſe name, as well as that of his country, was *Comagre*; and, that he lived in greater ſplendor than any other Cacique, and was very deſirous of being acquainted with the *Spaniards*. As the dominions of this Prince were large and fruitful, *Careta* deſired *Nunez* to pay him a viſit, and offered to accompany him.

On their arrival at the palace of *Comagre*, they found that it was a large wooden building, 150 yards in length, and 80 in breadth, ſurrounded with a good ſtone wall. The reception they met with was equally kind and hoſpitable; *Comagre* and his ſons taking all the pains imaginable to render their ſtay agreeable, and diſcovering in their converſation a knowledge and politeneſs much ſuperior to any of the *Indians* they had hitherto met with. They were entertained with plenty of proviſions, and with different kinds of liquors of various colours, not much inferior either in ſtrength or flavour to wine; and the Cacique and his ſons making them preſents of gold and pearls, they had no reaſon to repent of their journey, or to diſtruſt *Careta*, who ſeemed highly pleaſed with the courteous entertainment they had given his friends.

Comagre's eldeſt ſon being particularly deſirous of obliging his gueſts, cauſed ſeveral pieces of gold, that were valuable both for their workmanſhip and fineneſs, to be brought; and this gold, which weighed about 4000 pieces of eight, with 70 ſlaves, he gave to *Nunez* and *Colmenares*, who immediately began to weigh it, in order to ſet apart the fifth of the gold for

for the King, and to divide the reſt among themſelves; but ſome of the men quarrelling about the beſt and largeſt pieces, the young Prince ran to the ſcales, and ſtriking them with his double fiſt, threw all the gold upon the ground; ſaying, that they need not fall out about ſuch a trifle: but, if they were ſo fond of it as to diſturb peaceable nations, and leave their native country to obtain it, he would ſhew them a province where they might have as much as their hearts could wiſh; but that there muſt be a greater number of them, as they were to oppoſe a Monarch who defended his dominions with great bravery: that they would firſt meet with a Cacique who had a vaſt quantity of what they looked upon as wealth, and was ſix ſuns, or ſix days journey, from thence, pointing with his finger towards the *South Sea*, which he told them they would ſee as ſoon as they paſſed certain lands. He added, that there were other nations who had boats with ſails and oars, and that beyond that ſea they would find an immenſe quantity of gold, formed into veſſels out of which theſe people eat and drank. And having underſtood from the *Spaniards* that there was great plenty of iron in *Spain*, he ſignified that there was more gold in thoſe parts than iron in *Biſcay*. This was the firſt intimation given them of the extenſive country of *Peru*, whither he offered to accompany them. This diſcourſe was interpreted by the two *Spaniards* who had fled from *Nicueſſa*, and lived with *Careta*.

Afte

After a ſhort ſtay in the dominions of *Comagre*, *Nunez de Balboa* returned to his government of *Santa Maria*, in order to conſider at his leiſure of the propereſt means of making theſe important diſcoveries.

Valdivia had by this time returned from *Hiſpaniola*, with the ſtrongeſt aſſurances that *Diego Columbus* would give him ſufficient ſupport. This induced *Nunez* to ſend him over a ſecond time with the ſame inſtructions as before; but with freſh proofs of the ſervices he had rendered to the crown, and freſh preſents for thoſe whom he imagined moſt capable of ſupporting his intereſt: but the veſſel in which *Valdivia* attempted to ſail back to *Hiſpaniola*, was unfortunately ſhipwrecked in her paſſage on the coaſt of *Yucatan*, and the men with great difficulty got on ſhore, where they were quickly ſurrounded and made priſoners by the natives, who cruelly ſacrificed them to their idols; two only eſcaping, one of whom was *Agullor*, who was of ſuch great uſe to *Cortes*.

Nunez de Balboa was greatly afflicted at the news of this event, and, to prevent the ill conſequences that might ariſe from it, had ſome thoughts of going to *Spain*; but this the colony would not ſuffer, and he had ſoon ſufficient reaſon to believe that they judged right; for by the diſpatches he received from *Zamudio*, he was informed, that *Euciſo* had ſo incenſed the court againſt him, that there was no perſuading the miniſters, that he was not a villain who had in the higheſt degree trampled upon the royal authority.

Nunez

Nunez de Balboa, having conſidered the contents of theſe letters, plainly ſaw that nothing could reſtore his character in *Spain*, but making an immediate uſe of the informations he had received, by perfecting his diſcoveries of larger and richer countries, than hitherto the *Spaniards* had been acquainted with. This he judged would cover all his paſt faults, and atone for every irregularity he had committed; and therefore, without communicating to the colony any of the particulars contained in his diſpatches, he perſuaded them to engage in ſuch an expedition, as the moſt likely means of rendering them all rich and happy; upon which they gladly embraced this propoſal.

CHAP.

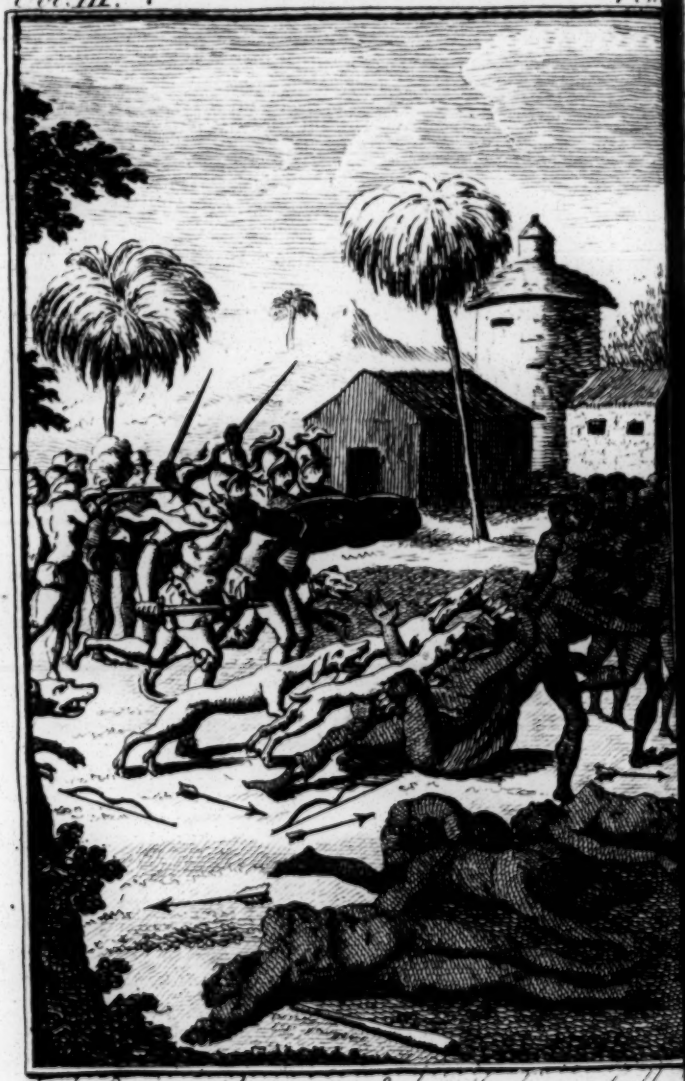
CHAP. II.

Nunez *marches in order to diſcover the* South Seas: *Obtains the Friendſhip of the Cacique* Ponca: *Defeats* Quarequa; *and takes a View of the* South Sea. *He alſo defeats the Cacique* Chiapes, *and afterwards obtains his Friendſhip: Takes a formal Poſſeſſion of the* South Sea, *and its Coaſts and Iſlands, in Behalf of the King of* Spain; *but in endeavouring to navigate a Bay, is in Danger of being loſt with* 80 *other* Spaniards. *He afterwards oppoſes* Tumaco, *a powerful Cacique; but, having obliged him to retire, concludes a Peace with him, and obtains a great Quantity of Pearls and Diamonds.*

NUNEZ DE BALBOA having reſolved to march towards the *South Sea*, ſailed from *Santa Maria* about the middle of *September* 1513, as far as the territories of the Cacique *Careta*, who received him in a very friendly manner. He there left one of his brigantines and a canoe, and advanced towards the mountains belonging to *Ponca*, attended by a body of *Careta*'s ſubjects. The Cacique *Ponca* being ſoon informed of the approach of the *Spaniards*, hid himſelf; when *Nunez* ſent ſome of the *Indians* belonging to *Careta* to aſſure him that he had nothing to fear, and that he only deſired his friendſhip; upon which *Ponca* came to meet him with a preſent of gold, to the value of 110 peſos, which

was

7 AP 53



The Cacique Quarequa & his Indians fall upon Nuno & his Spaniards, but are defeated & great numbers torn to pieces by Dogs.

was all he had. *Nunez* being ſenſible of the neceſſity of leaving no enemy behind him, received the Cacique with much joy, and gave him abundance of beads, hawk's-bells, looking-glaſſes, and, what theſe *Indians* moſt valued, ſome iron axes; and then aſked him for guides, and men to carry burdens up the mountains.

The Cacique readily granted all he deſired; and, having ſupplied him with plenty of proviſions, the *Spaniards* marched into the dominions of a great Lord named *Quarequa*, who was prepared to oppoſe them, he having provided a great number of men armed with bows and arrows, and a kind of ſlings for throwing darts made of wood hardened in the fire. They had alſo clubs made of a very hard kind of wood, which they uſed with both hands. In this manner the *Indians* met the *Spaniards*, aſking what they came for, and ordering them to proceed no farther; but obſerving that they paid little regard to what they ſaid, the Cacique himſelf came forward, cloathed in cotton, with ſome of his principal men, all the reſt being intirely naked, and immediately attacked the *Spaniards* with dreadful cries. *Nunez* inſtantly ordered his ſoldiers to diſcharge their fire-locks and croſs-bows; upon which ſome dropped down dead: when the *Indians*, ſeeing the fire and hearing the report, naturally concluded that the *Spaniards* uſed thunder and lightening, and had a ſupernatural power to deſtroy them, they therefore fled in the utmoſt conſternation. The *Spaniards* purſued, ſetting their dogs upon them, which tore ſome of them in pieces; while the *Spaniards* made

made a great ſlaughter with their ſwords. In this engagement the Cacique himſelf was killed with about 600 of his people; ſome were taken, and the town was plundered, in which the conqueror found a conſiderable quantity of gold. Among the priſoners were the Cacique's brother, and ſome others adorned like women; from which circumſtance, *Nunez* judging that they were guilty of ſodomy, without any other proof cauſed them to be torn in pieces by the dogs.

As ſome of the *Spaniards* were now grown ſickly with hunger and fatigue, *Nunez* left them in the town, which belonged to the late Cacique, where he took freſh guides, and men to carry burdens, diſmiſſing thoſe who belonged to *Careta*. He then proceeded towards the top of the mountains, which was at the diſtance of about ſix days journey; but in this progreſs he ſpent twenty-five, on account of the ruggedneſs of the way, and the difficulty of procuring proviſions. At length *Nunez* having notice given him that they were near the ſummit, commanded his men to halt, and going up alone ſaw the *South Sea*; which he no ſooner viewed than, falling on his knees, he returned thanks to Heaven for being the firſt who had ſeen it. This done he called his men, and again falling on his knees, they followed his example, while the *Indians* ſtood amazed at ſeeing ſuch expreſſions of joy and wonder. *Nunez* then extolled the intelligence given him by *Comagre*'s ſon, promiſing his men wealth and happineſs: they believed all he ſaid, for he was extremly beloved on account of his bravery, his compaſſion for

he ſick and wounded, and his making no difference between himſelf and the meaneſt ſoldier. He then cauſed a certificate to be drawn of his aking poſſeſſion of that ſea, and every thing in t, for the crown of *Caſtile*; in teſtimony of which he cut down timber, erected croſſes, aiſed heaps of ſtones, and cut the King of *Spain*'s name on ſome of the trees. This being done, he reſolved to go down the mountains to the ſea coaſt.

Nunez, being informed that near this place here was another town, belonging to a Lord whoſe name was *Chiapes*, advanced very cauiouſly; while that Cacique perceiving the ſmall number of the *Spaniards*, marched againſt them; but drawing near, the latter ſaluted them, firſt with their fire arms, and then with their croſsbows, after which they let looſe their dogs. The *Indians*, terrified at this reception, fled with the utmoſt precipitation, while the *Spaniards* purſued, and, having taken ſome priſoners, diſmiſſed a part of them with ſome of *Quarequa*'s people, to aſſure *Chiapes* that they deſired his friendſhip. At this meſſage, that Cacique thought it ſafeſt to put himſelf into the hands of theſe dreadful enemies, and therefore waited upon them with the value of 400 pieces of eight in gold. *Nunez* received him very graciouſly, giving him beads, looking-glaſſes, and ſome hatchets; and having here alſo given ſome trifles to *Quarequa*'s *Indians*, he diſmiſſed them well pleaſed with their treatment.

Nunez now ſent Captain *Francis Pizarro*, *Juan Eſcarray*, and *Alonzo Martin*, with twelve men

under each, to find the ſhorteſt way to the ſea. *Alonzo Martin* diſcovering the readieſt road, came in two days to a place where he found two canoes upon dry land, yet ſaw no ſea; but while he was conſidering which way theſe canoes came thither, the tide flowed in, and ſoon lifted them up; for on that coaſt it ebbs and flows every ſix hours two or three fathoms, ſo that large ſhips are left dry, and no ſea-water appears for at leaſt two or three leagues. *Alonzo Martin* ſeeing the canoes ſwim, went into one of them, and bid his companions bear witneſs that he was the firſt that entered the *South Seas*; another did the ſame, and bid them bear witneſs that he was the ſecond; after which they returned to carry this news to *Nunez*; who, upon receiving this intelligence, reſolved to proceed to the ſea ſide with the Cacique, to try what farther diſcoveries could be made. On their reaching the ſhore, that *Spaniſh* Commander marched on armed as he was, till the water took him up to the middle; and then cauſed a notary to draw up an inſtrument, importing that he had taken poſſeſſion of that ſea, its coaſts, and the iſlands in it in behalf of the crown of *Caſtile*; at which ceremony the *Indians* were very juſtly amazed.

He next paſſed the mouth of a great river and landed on the oppoſite ſide in the territories of another *Indian* Prince, whoſe name was *Coura* and who at firſt endeavoured to make ſome reſiſtance; but finding it was in vain, he ſuffered his ſon to go and treat with them, and he himſelf ſoon after carried them a conſiderable preſent.

E.

the fea.
d, came
nd two
it while
es came
d them
very fix
ge ships
s for at
tin fee-
em, and
was the
her did
he was
o carry
ing this
ſea ſide
er diſ-
eaching
hed on,
p to the
w up an
poſſeſ-
ds in it,
hich ce-
nazed.
at river,
rritories
s *Coura*
ſome re-
ſuffered
he him-
iderable

Nunez

SOUTH AMERICA
Laid down from the
Best Modern Maps
with Improvements
by Emm: Bowen
Geogr to His Majesty
1751.
NORTH SEA
THE
SOUTH
SEA
TERRA FIRMA
AMAZON
PARAG
PATAGONICA
Tropic of Capricorn
Davis's Land
Soconusco
Amapala
Chagre
Cartagena
Caracco
Merida
Trinidad
Buenaventura
Otavalo
Gallego
Pagos
Quito
Guayaquil
Payta
Truxillo
Santa
Guarmay
Lima
Callao
Pisco
Camana
Arica
Pino
Iqueik
Zoa
Cubixa
Juneal
Copia
Guasco
Coquimbo
Quintero
Juan Fernandez
Masa Fuero
Bucalenia
I. St. Mary
la Conception
Baldivia
Carelmapo
I. Chiloe
Guaffa I.
Pt. St. Domingo
Socoro I.
I. St. Barbara
Calamac
C. Victory
Mt. of Megell
Pt. St. D. Drake
C. Horn
Pampas
Imperial
Puelc
Penas
Tucuman
Cordova
Londres
Mendoza
Buenos Ayres
Rio de la Plata
Potosi
Lima
Cusco
Titicaca L.
Arequipa
Guayaquil
Panama
Porto Bello
Carthagena
Margarita
Trinidad
Caracas
Merida
Coro
Guiana
Yenaida
Amazon R.
Maranon R.
Paraguay R.
Rio de la Plata
Tucuman
Cordova
Buenos Ayres
Pampas
Patagones
Falkland I.
Sebald I.
Barnevelt I.
Hermite I.
Staten I.
Le Maire
Terra del Fuego
C. Blanco
C. Francisco
Gallo I.
Coco I.
I. del
The Gallapagos
I. Samblose
St. Felix
St. Ambrose I.
Juan Fernandez
Masa Fuero
Quibo I.
Quicara I.
Panama
St. Maria
Porto Velo
Chagre
Cart

ATLANTIC
OCEAN
SOUTHERN
OCEAN
AFRICA
C. Tagrin
Sunguin
Equinoctial Line
St. Mathew
I. Fernandez
de Voronna
Ascention
Meridian of Ferro
17°.35. West from London
St. Helena
Trinidad
Picos
Saxemberg
Tristan de Cunha
Alboare
Terra Australis
Surinanam
Cayenna
C. Orange
North Cape
R. of Amazons
Maragnan
Siara
C. Oneas
C. Pedras
C. Roque
Rio Grande
Paraiba
Tamaracca
the Recif
C. St. Augustin
Tapuyes
Olinda or Pernambuc
Xingu
Seregippe
St. Salvador
Baya de todos Santos
Rio dos Ilhoes
Pto. Segure
Rio Dou
BRASIL
L. des Xarayes
Sta. Fe
Xerres
St. Ignatio
S. Sebastian
St. Paul
Espiritu Santo
C. St. Tome
C. Frio
Assumption
Guaira
GUAY
St. Vincent I.
Janeiro
Cananea I.
St. Catherines I.
Tapeia
Port o Pedre or Rio grande
C. St. Maria
Rio de la Plata
C. San Antonio
C. St. Andrew
Anegada Bay
St. Mathias or Sin funda
Redondo
Pepy's I.
Falkland I.

Nunez Balboa at length obſerving a large bay of the ſea, reſolved to navigate it, and therefore deſired the *Indians* to furniſh him with canoes; which they did, and offered to accompany him, though they at the ſame time adviſed him to ſuſpend this attempt, as the rains were coming on, and the bay was far from being ſafe; but he obſtinately refuſed to comply with this advice, and embarked with fourſcore *Spaniards*, together with *Chiapes* and ſome of his attendants, on board nine canoes.

They weighed anchor on the 29th of *September*; for which reaſon he called it *St. Michael's Bay:* but when they were at ſome diſtance from land, the waves began to ſwell ſo high that *Nunez* repented he had not taken the advice given him by *Chiapes*, and was ſoon in the utmoſt danger of periſhing: but the *Indians* had recourſe to their uſual remedy; and faſtening two canoes together with cords, to prevent their being ſo eaſily overſet, made the beſt of their way towards an iſland; where they landed, and laſhed their canoes to the rocks or trees. There they continued all the night in the utmoſt uneaſineſs; for upon the flood the whole iſland was covered with water, and they were obliged to ſtand in it almoſt up to their waiſts. When day appeared, and the water ebbed, they went in ſearch of their canoes, but found ſome of them beaten in pieces, others almoſt ſplit, and the reſt filled with water and ſand, and no part of their goods or proviſions was to be found. In this diſtreſs they pulled off the tender bark of the young trees, and, bruiſing it with graſs and other herbs,

caulked the crannies of ſuch of the canoes as were not ſtaved, and thus embarked almoſt famiſhed with hunger.

They now ſteered towards the dominions of a Cacique named *Tumaco*, which lay in a creek of the bay, where they found him ready to oppoſe them. *Nunez*, perceiving his men weak and hungry, no ſooner landed, than he picked out a few of the ableſt of them, whom he placed in the front. The *Spaniards* began the engagement with their ſwords and dogs, with which they made great havock; and *Tumaco* himſelf being wounded, the reſt were obliged to retire. Soon after *Chiapes* ſent ſome of his men to let *Tumaco* know the power of the *Spaniards*, and the kindneſs they ſhewed to thoſe who were their friends. The Cacique, however, could not be perſuaded to believe their report; but a ſecond meſſenger prevailed ſo far, that he ſent his ſon, whom *Nunez* entertained very courteouſly, giving him a ſhirt and ſome toys, and adviſing him to perſuade his father to come himſelf, and have a ſhare in his friendſhip. Upon which *Tumaco* went, attended by many of his ſubjects, but carried no preſent. However, *Nunez* treated him with much reſpect, and *Chiapes* obſerved to him, that he thought it but reaſonable that he ſhould aſſiſt the *Spaniards* on account of their being ſtrangers.

The Cacique being now pacified, and loſing all his apprehenſions, ſent ſome of his ſervants home, who brought gold to the value of 614 pieces of eight, and, what was much more extraordinary, 240 fine large pearls, with many

others,

others, that were bright, though ſmall. At this ſight *Nunez* and his men were filled with joy, believing the immenſe treaſures *Comagre*'s ſon had mentioned were now at hand. The large pearls were of great value, and would have been of ſtill greater, had not the *Indians* uſed fire in opening the oyſters, which rendered them not ſo white as they naturally are. *Tumaco* obſerving that the pearls gave the *Spaniards* ſuch joy, ſhewed that he himſelf ſet but little value on them, by ſending ſome *Indians* to fiſh, who, within four days, brought as many as weighed no leſs than 96 ounces. Both the *Spaniards* and *Indians* were much pleaſed; the former with the proſpect of immenſe wealth; and the latter, eſpecially the Caciques, at obtaining the friendſhip of the *Spaniards* for what they eſteemed at ſo cheap a rate as pearls and gold. But *Chiapes* rejoiced moſt, on account of his being inſtrumental in gaining *Tumaco*'s friendſhip.

Theſe two Caciques aſſured *Nunez*, that there was a country in that bay, about five leagues from thence, governed by a powerful Cacique, where there was abundance of large oyſters, which contained pearls as big as beans. Upon which *Nunez* ordered the canoes to be immediately got ready; but the Caciques intreated him not to think of ſuch an expedition at that time; but to ſtay till ſummer, when the ſea was calm, and he might go with eaſe, and then they promiſed to go with him. *Nunez* approving of this advice, *Tumaco* added, that the coaſt extended a prodigious way, pointing to *Peru*: that

there was an immenſe quantity of gold, and that the natives uſed certain beaſts to carry their burdens, which were the ſheep of that country: he even made the repreſentation of them in clay. The *Spaniards* were amazed; ſome ſaid they were camels, and others that they were fallow deer, of which there are many on the continent, about as big as ſmall calves, but their horns are ſmall, and their legs ſhort in proportion to their bodies.

CHAP. III.

Nunez *ſends another Agent to the Court of* Spain, *with a rich Preſent to the Biſhop of* Burgos, *who had before appointed* Pedrarias *Governor of* Golden Caſtile. *This new Governor cruelly perſecutes* Nunez de Balboa, *and treats the* Indians *with the utmoſt Inhumanity, which forces them to take up Arms againſt him.* Nunez, *however, cauſes a Peace to be reſtored, builds a Town on the* South Sea, *and is at laſt beheaded.*

ABOUT the middle of *January*, *Nunez* returned to *Santa Maria*, carrying with him gold to a very great value, and pearls to a much greater; of which he made a very equitable diviſion, reſerving the fifth part for the King, and diſtributing the reſt among the ſoldiers, in ſuch a manner that they were perfectly ſatisfied with his conduct. He now judged with great appearance of reaſon, that the ſignal ſer-

ſervices he had performed, rendered it impoſſible for the Miniſters to deny that he had made amends for any indiſcretions into which he had fallen; he therefore reſolved to ſend another Agent to *Spain* with the King's money, and with more conſiderable preſents than it was in his power to ſend by the former, and therefore ſent on this important meſſage *Pedro Abolanchos*, a perſon of capacity, and, what was ſtill of greater conſequence, of unſhaken integrity and fidelity.

On this perſon's arrival at court, he applied himſelf to the famous Biſhop of *Burgos*, who received his letters with civility, which changed into the greateſt kindneſs and friendſhip, upon his ſeeing the pearls and gold ſent him by *Nunez*; for theſe fully convinced him of his innocence, and of his being a good and faithful officer. He therefore took great pains to vindicate him to King *Ferdinand*, who had hitherto a great averſion to *Nunez de Balboa*: but the favours of this Prelate came too late, for he himſelf had already done this unhappy man ſuch an injury, as he was unable to repair. It was a maxim with this Biſhop, that nothing was ſo dangerous, as ſuffering the great men who made diſcoveries in *America* to perfect them; and therefore, as ſoon as they had opened the road to the new countries, and had overcome the firſt, which are always the greateſt difficulties, it was his conſtant method to ſend ſome of his own creatures, to reap the fruits of their labours.

Before

Before the arrival of *Nunez*'s Agent, he had chosen *Pedro Arias d'Avila* Governor of *Castillo del Oro*, whom the *Spaniſh* writers, by joining his two firſt names, commonly called *Pedrarias*. He was a man of birth and of a court education, but proud, haughty, inſincere, barbarous and unjuſt; cruel beyond expreſſion; and one who thought the only compenſation that could be made for leaving his native country, was his raiſing a vaſt fortune; which, as he wanted abilities to do in an honeſt way, he reſolved to bring about by the methods he underſtood, which were violence, fraud and oppreſſion; in all which he was a complete maſter. We have his character drawn to the life, by the hand of the humane and worthy Biſhop of *Chiapa*, who repreſents him as the wickedeſt monſter that was ever ſent into thoſe parts.

This new Governor ſailed from *Spain*, on the 12th of *April*, 1514, with a fleet of fifteen ſail, on board of which were 2000 ſoldiers, a Fryar, *John de Quevedo*, who, before his departure, had been conſecrated Biſhop of *Darien*, with many other perſons in great offices, among whom was *Enciſo*, the mortal enemy of *Nunez*, who was *Pedrarias*'s Provoſt-Marſhal. This fleet arrived in the gulph of *Uraba*, in the latter end of *July*, and from thence proceeded to *Santa Maria*, where the commander was received with all imaginable reſpect by *Nunez de Balboa*.

Pedrarias was very much ſurprized at the late Governor's appearance, and at the ſtate in which he found the colony. There was indeed a very ſtrong

strong fort, and 450 brave fellows to defend it; but *Nunez*'s house, or, if you will, his palace, consisted but of three rooms, and his dress corresponded with his dwelling; he had a pair of canvas drawers, and a cotton waistcoat over his shirt, and that was all. His diet was of a piece with the rest; for a joint of roast pork, some greens and fruit, were all his table afforded; at which no other liquor was drank than good spring water. Such were the manners of this conqueror, who fared no better than the meanest of his soldiers; but there was no murmuring, no complaints; he maintained his authority, by the means with which he had acquired it; that is, by his merit; while his soldiers loved and feared him as a father. His only fault was his ambition, that had led him to do some unwarrantable things, in order to obtain power; but when he had once acquired it, none used it better. His accounts were clear; he made good every point he had written to *Spain*, and proved that he had opened a passage to the *South Seas*; in return for which good services, *Pedrarias* committed him close prisoner to the custody of *Enciso*, and did not set him at liberty, till he had fined him in above half his fortune.

In order to justify this proceeding, he sent over a very false report to the court of *Spain*, expecting that this would have procured him authority for going greater lengths; but he was mistaken. He had brought over some honest men with him, who ventured to send the naked truth to court, and it met with all the credit it deserved.

In

In anſwer to theſe repreſentations, *Pedrarias* received freſh advices from his Majeſty, in which the King declared, that he was perfectly ſatiſfied with the conduct of *Nunez de Balboa*, and had created him Lord Lieutenant of the countries on the *South Seas*; that his Majeſty expected that the Governor ſhould take his advice, and that the meaſure of his obedience to his royal orders would appear from the reſpect he ſhewed to *Nunez de Balboa*. *Pedrarias*, equally diſpleaſed and diſappointed, took care to conceal his inſtructions; and, like a true courtier, reſolved in appearance to conform to his maſter's orders; but, in effect, to diſobey them, and to leave no means untried to procure the deſtruction of the man he hated.

In order to leſſen the character of his predeceſſor, and to raiſe his own, *Pedrarias* ſent ſeveral of his officers to make excurſions into the country; which he thought muſt produce new diſcoveries, as indeed they did: but theſe were neither to the advantage of the colony nor to the crown of *Spain*, ſince they only contributed to ſhew the avarice and cruelty of the *Spaniards* in the moſt glaring light. His officers knew that the only method to obtain his favour and protection, was to make him large preſents and to plunder all the Caciques without mercy; ſo that in a few months time, that reputation for honeſty and kind uſage, which *Nunez de Balboa* had been at ſome pains to eſtabliſh, was intirely loſt, and a war between them and the natives broke out afreſh with greater fury than ever, ſo that there were no great hopes of his making

an

any progreſs; which when he came ſeriouſly to conſider, he entered upon a new ſcheme, and, by the aſſiſtance of Biſhop *Quevedo*, became reconciled to *Nunez*, who very ſincerely applied himſelf as formerly to the public ſervice, and that with his uſual ſucceſs.

This, however, only ſerved to raiſe the envy of *Pedrarias*, even though he had promiſed to give *Nunez* his daughter, and publicly called and treated him as his ſon. He had employed him in raiſing a town, eſtabliſhing a port, and building ſhips on the *South Seas*; all which, with incredible labour and fatigue, he at length accompliſhed; and this added to the great reputation he had before acquired. *Pedrarias* ſeeing this, and finding that moſt of the people in his government were inclined to remove, and ſettle in the town built by *Nunez de Balboa*, as ſoon as it ſhould be finiſhed, reſolved no longer to delay removing out of the way a man, whoſe ſuperiority became more and more conſpicuous; and for this purpoſe ſent for him to *Santa Maria*.

Nunez de Balboa, relying upon his own innocence, and thinking it out of the Governor's power to hurt him, made no difficulty of obeying his orders; but immediately upon his arrival, *Pedrarias* commenced a freſh proſecution againſt him, on the ſame pretences for which he had fined him before, to which he had added another very extraordinary accuſation; a treaſonable intention to uſurp the King's domain founded upon nothing more than his having cu down, without the Governor's licence, ſome timber

timber for erecting public edifices; and, to the amazement of the colony, and the terror of the inhabitants, he, upon this charge, condemned him to ſuffer death, and actually cauſed this unfortunate gentleman to be publicly beheaded.

Such was the fate of *Vaſquez Nunez de Balboa*, who, in the 42d year of his age, ſuffered as a traitor, for having ſerved his Prince with too much zeal and fidelity. This happened in the year 1517, and in the third of *Pedrarias*'s government. The royal audience at *St. Domingo*, however, condemned this action as a downright murder, but *Pedrarias* does not ſeem to have been ever called to an account for it; but, on the contrary, was permitted to go on in the ſame baſe and barbarous track for many years together.

CHAP. IV.

Pedrarias *builds the City of* Panama, *and engages in a long and unſucceſsful War with the Cacique* Urraca. *The Court of* Spain *being at length wearied out with Complaints againſt him, ſends a new Governor; upon which he retires to* Nicaragua, *when, under the form of Juſtice, he murders* Francis Hernandez, *who had made a Conqueſt of that Province.*

PEDRARIAS, having thus, at the expence of law and juſtice, freed himſelf from a man whom he at once both feared and hated, reſolved to ſettle a new colony on the coaſt of the *South*

South Seas, though that place, from the heat and moiſture of the adjacent country, was very unwholeſome; but it was a place commodious for trade, and very convenient for forming new diſcoveries. He there built a palace, and made it the ſeat of his government; which inducing others to chuſe it for the place of their reſidence, it ſoon increaſed in the number of its inhabitants, and was pretty well fortified.

This city, which received the name of *Panama*, may deſerve an account of its preſent ſtate. It is but of a ſmall circumference, on account of a moraſs that incloſes it on one ſide; and the damps, which ariſe from the moraſs, render the place ſo very unhealthy, that there are few inhabitants, except traders, who generally ſtay there no longer than is neceſſary to acquire a ſufficient fortune to enable them to leave it. A river runs near the city, and in its neighbourhood is a large diſtrict, in which are many farms, and great numbers of black cattle. It abounds in the fruits of the country; as pine-apples, plantanes, and guavas; beſides which ſeveral ſorts of *Spaniſh* fruit have been introduced. The rivers in its neighbourhood afforded great quantities of gold, when the city was firſt built; but neither wheat nor barley grow within its neighbourhood; however, it is ſupplied with maize from *Peru*. Both the rivers and the ſea abound with fiſh; and near the houſes, along the coaſt, are vaſt quantities of cockles; on which account the *Spaniards* ſuppoſe *Pedrarias* choſe this ſpot, as they would be ſome ſupply in a time of ſcarcity. In the rivers of this province are vaſt

numbers of alligators of a monstrous size, which have devoured many of the *Spaniards* and *Indians*.

But to return; though *Pedrarias* had a strong desire to distinguish himself by doing something great, yet, in the space of eight or nine years he did little or nothing; for his vices defeated his schemes, and rendered all his undertakings abortive. Instead of treating the *Indian* Caciques, as his predecessor *Nunez* had done, with civility and justice, he behaved towards them like an imperious master, and yet was unable to extort half the quantity of gold that had been freely bestowed on *Balboa* in presents. He granted licences to various persons to undertake discoveries, but on such hard terms and with so many restrictions, that they had no better success than himself, and all their endeavours had no other effect than to waste great numbers of men, and to bring an odium upon these expeditions.

But what chiefly employed the care of *Pedrarias* was reducing *Urraca*, a Cacique of the mountains, whose country was very rich in gold and who, after the decease of *Nunez*, would have nothing to do with the *Spaniards*; presuming, he said, they could mean no good to others, who murdered and persecuted each other. The Governor made war upon him for five years together, and in that time destroyed a great number of his subjects, without being able to subdue or render him tributary; on the contrary, the Cacique was frequently too hard for the *Spaniards*; his subjects were stout and warlike, and

the ſituation of his country gave him ſuch advantages, that the *Spaniards* could never act againſt him with their horſe. He was a brave and enterprizing Prince, had great good ſenſe, and foreſaw advantages as ſoon as any man, and there were few who could manage them better. *Pedrarias* therefore loſt more men in the courſe of this war, than *Cortes* in the conqueſt of *Mexico*, without even gaining a foot of land, or an ounce of gold; but he made himſelf ſome amends by the grievous extortions he committed among the Caciques who had ſubmitted to the *Spaniards*; and, with the gold he forced from them, maintained ſo great an intereſt at court, that, notwithſtanding every enterprize in which he engaged was attended with loſs, yet every new project he ſent over was approved and applauded.

This was the more extraordinary, as no man ever met with more oppoſition than he did: for, on the one hand, he was hated to the laſt degree by the *Indians*, for whoſe ſake the Biſhop of *Chiapa* had the humanity to go in perſon to *Madrid* to ſolicit relief. The *Spaniſh* officers, who were uneaſy under his government, ſent home a true repreſentation of his conduct, which was ſuch as would have ruined the fortune of any other man. Beſides all this, he was upon very bad terms with the royal audience at *St. Domingo*, which was then, what it ſtill is, the ſupreme tribunal in the *Weſt-Indies*; and the chief reaſon for his removing the ſeat of his government from *Santa Maria* to *Panama*, was, that he might be farther out of their reach.

However, about the beginning of the yea
1526, the court of *Spain*, wearied with conti
nual complaints againſt him, was at length re
ſolved to ſend him a ſucceſſor. *Pedrarias* wa
informed of this reſolution, and, as he knew n
means of avoiding his coming, and was ver
loth to part with his power, he began to ca
about in his own mind where to find anothe
eſtabliſhment. There was only one expedition
under any of his creatures which had met wit
ſucceſs, and that was the conqueſt of *Nicaragu*
by *Francis Hernandez*, who acted under his li
cence, and the Governor had alſo been at ſom
expence in fitting him out. He reſolved there
fore to retire into this country, in order to ſe
cure it for himſelf, though it of right belonge
to him who had ſubdued it; and alſo to avoi
delivering up his province to his ſucceſſor i
perſon, for fear he ſhould treat him as he him
ſelf had done *Nunez*. One would have ima
gined, that, when his affairs were in ſuch a ſi
tuation, he would have abated ſomewhat of hi
pride, or at leaſt of his cruelty; but, whethe
he had no power over his temper, or knew
that he had ſtill intereſt enough at court to pre
vent his being called to an account for murder
he committed one more baſe and barbarous, i
poſſible, than that of *Nunez de Balboa*.

On his entering the new province, he pre
tended that he had received information that hi
deputy intended to revolt, and therefore ſent fo
him to anſwer to the charge: *Francis Hernande*
came with that boldneſs which is natural to in
nocence; but *Pedrarias* no ſooner had him i
hi

his power, than he cauſed his head to be ſtruck off; alledging, that there was no other way for a government to be ſafe againſt perſons in power, when their fidelity was once ſuſpected. Yet, as black and heinous as this fact was, he not only eſcaped being called to an account for it, but was confirmed in his government of *Nicaragua*, as if the gratification of his own cruel diſpoſition had been an indiſputable proof of his zeal and attachment to the crown of *Spain*.

THE CONQUEST OF PERU, BY FRANCIS PIZARRO

CHAP. I.

Francis Pizarro, *with the Aſſiſtance of two other Perſons, undertakes the Diſcovery of* Peru, *meets with many Hardſhips, till at length obtaining a particular Account of the immenſe Riches of the Country of which he is in ſearch, he returns to* Panama; *but being oppoſed by the Governor, embarks for* Spain.

THE reader has ſeen, in the preceding chapters, that *Vaſquez Nunez de Balboa* was the firſt *Spaniard* who formed the project of making diſcoveries on the *South Sea*, and the deſire of wreſting the execution of it out of the hands

hands, as the principal motive that induced *Pedrarias* to take away his life. But when all the expeditions undertaken by this cruel monſter had failed, three perſons, in the year 1524, offered to engage in this undertaking at their own expence, provided they might be allowed fair and equitable terms. To this propoſal *Pedrarias* readily liſtened, believing that he ran no hazard in complying with their requeſt, ſince, if they miſcarried, he ſhould loſe nothing; and if they ſucceeded, he hoped that he ſhould be able to ſecure to himſelf the fruits of their enterprize.

The principal of theſe three perſons was *Francis Pizarro*, who has been already mentioned more than once. He was a native of *Truxillo*, a town in the province of *Eſtramadura* in *Spain*; and ſome of the *Spaniſh* writers ſay, he was a nobleman by birth; while others maintain that he was the illegitimate ſon of *Gonzalo Pizarro*, an officer at *Truxillo*, who ſuffered him to be expoſed as a foundling at a church-door; however, being diſcovered to be the father, he was obliged to ſupport him; but giving him no manner of education, he made him ſpend his youth in the moſt ſervile offices, and in particular in keeping his hogs. Young *Pizarro*, however, at length ran away from the herd, and, entering on board a ſhip, ſailed to the *Weſt Indies*, where he diſtinguiſhed himſelf, by his bold and enterpriſing diſpoſition, in the wars of *Hiſpaniola* and *Cuba*, and obtained a commiſſion; he at length ſailed with *Hojeda* to the gulph of *Darien*, and afterwards

ſerved

ſerved under *Nunez de Balboa*, and, having acquired a handſome fortune, had, on the firſt building of *Panama*, ſettled in that city, where he ſeemed diſpoſed to ſpend the remainder of his life in peace, till the thirſt of gold incited him to engage in this undertaking, and afterwards prompted him to commit actions that rendered him a diſgrace to human nature.

The ſecond of theſe adventurers was *Diego de Almagro*, who took his name from the place of his birth; for his origin was ſo obſcure, that no hiſtorian has been able to diſcover who was his father.

The third was *Ferdinando de Luques*, or, as he is ſometimes called, *de Lugne*, who, as well as both the former, was advanced in years. This man, who was a prieſt, had much the largeſt fortune; he was proprietor of the iſland of *Tabago*, had a good eſtate beſides, and a conſiderable ſum in ready money.

This partnerſhip made much noiſe, as nothing could be more ſingular than for three private men to raiſe a joint ſtock for conquering a great empire; and this, like other projects, was treated as a wild and viſionary ſcheme that would infallibly end in the ruin of the projectors: but, without regarding the opinions of the world, they ſolemnly promiſed each other, that no dangers nor diſappointments ſhould make them lay aſide their enterpriſe, and that they would make an equal diviſion of the wealth they ſhould acquire, after having firſt deducted the Emperor's dues, and all expences. To each of them was aſſigned a particular part in the conqueſt

conqueſt of *Peru*: *Francis Pizarro* was to command the party that went upon the diſcovery; *Almagro* was to carry him recruits, and to reinforce him from time to time; and *Ferdinand de Luques* was to ſtay at *Panama*, to provide ammunition and proviſions for the uſe of thoſe engaged in the expedition.

Theſe articles being agreed upon, they repaired ſolemnly to high maſs, which was celebrated by the prieſt *Ferdinando de Luques*, who, having broke the wafer into three pieces, took the firſt himſelf, and gave the others to his companions, as a token that they would purſue their preſent project with no leſs eagerneſs, than if their eternal happineſs depended upon it. They took care to make the beſt inquiries they could into the cauſes of all former miſcarriages, in order the better to avoid them; and were very aſſiduous in finding out perſons who had been employed in the preceding expeditions, that they might reap the benefit of their experience.

About the middle of *November*, 1524, *Pizarro* embarked in a new ſhip with 114 men, officers included, and proceeded to an iſland, about five leagues diſtant from *Panama*, whence he ſailed to the *Pearl Iſlands* in the midſt of the bay, where he took in wood and water, with hay for four horſes he had on board; and then proceeding 100 leagues to the ſouthward, landed at *Port Pinas*, upon the continent, on the ſouth ſide of the bay of *Panama*, where he endeavoured to penetrate into the country; but the people having fled from their habitations, and meeting with nothing but bogs and mountains, without any

any proſpect of proviſions, he proceeded farther down the coaſt; but finding there the ſame inconveniences, and perceiving the rainy ſeaſon coming on, and that many of his men died by ſickneſs, fatigue, and want of proviſions, he ſent the ſhip to the *Iſle of Pearls*, to procure freſh ſupplies.

Mean while *Pizarro* was joined by *Almagro*, with two ſhips, and 60 recruits; when, notwithſtanding the unhealthineſs of the climate, they continued on the coaſt, and had many ſkirmiſhes with the natives, in one of which *Almagro* loſt an eye; but happening in ſome of their excurſions to meet with gold to the value of 14 or 15000 crowns, they reſolved, in ſpite of all the hazards and difficulties they encountered, to proceed on the enterprize; to which they were encouraged by their pilot, who, while they were on ſhore, had run down as far as *Cape Paſſaro*, under the equator, where he ſeized ſome priſoners, who made him ſenſible that the treaſures of *Peru* greatly ſurpaſſed whatever had been reported of them.

When the pilot returned with this agreeable news, he found *Pizarro* greatly reduced; his money being exhauſted, his men ſick, and *Almagro* gone to *Panama* with the gold they had taken, to procure another reinforcement of troops and proviſions.

Almagro raiſed 40 recruits, and having purchaſed ſome horſes, arms, cloaths, proviſions and medicines, returned to *Pizarro*, where the greateſt part of his men being ſick or dead, they removed from that unhealthy part of the conti-

nent

nent to the iſland of *Gallo*, where having ſtaid about 15 days, they ran ſtill farther to the ſouthward; but found the weather continue ſo bad, and the country ſo much under water, that *Pizarro* himſelf began to deſpair of ſucceſs; and ſo hot was the diſpute about continuing the enterprize, that the two commanders were on the point of drawing their ſwords; but at length it was agreed, that they ſhould return to the iſland of *Gallo*, where *Pizarro* was to remain with his men, till *Almagro* went to *Panama* for recruits. Many of the ſoldiers deſired to go along with him; but this was abſolutely refuſed; and, as ſeveral of the ſoldiers had threatened to complain to the Governor, that ſending them on this expedition was devoting them to deſtruction, great care was taken to prevent their ſending any letters. However, one of them found means to ſend a paper, ſubſcribed by moſt of them, repreſenting their hardſhips, and deſiring to be recalled; which was ſo artfully incloſed in a bottom of cotton yarn, that it eſcaped the vigilance of the officers, and came ſafely to the hands of the new Governor; for *Pedrarias* was now removed from his government, and ſucceeded by *Pedro los Rios*, who was ſo far from ſuffering *Almagro* to raiſe more recruits, that he ſent a ſhip with a Commiſſary to the iſland of *Gallo*, to bring back all the men who ſurvived.

The arrival of this ſhip greatly mortified *Pizarro*, who intreated the Commiſſary to allow ſuch of the men to ſtay with him as voluntarily choſe it; which being granted, he drew a line with

with the point of his ſword, and, haranguing his men, told them they were at liberty, if they thought fit, to return to *Panama*; but he was grieved at the thought of their now abandoning ſo glorious a proſpect, when they were on the point of reaping the reward of all their ſufferings. That, for his part, he would periſh in the glorious undertaking, rather than deſert it, and thoſe who voluntarily ſtaid ſhould ſhare with him the treaſures which fell into his hands. He then deſired thoſe who were willing to proceed, to come over the line he had drawn. But ſo great were the ſufferings of theſe poor people, that only thirteen men and a Mullatto came over; while the reſt, embarking with the Commiſſary, returned to *Panama*.

Pizarro's affairs were now in a moſt wretched ſituation, for he was not only deprived of the hopes of performing any thing remarkable at preſent, but had a very indifferent proſpect with reſpect to futurity. In this diſtreſs, which he concealed in his own breaſt, he retired with a few daring fellows, who reſolved to follow his deſperate fortune, to the iſland of *Gorgona* for a ſupply of water, and ſtaid there till he was joined by *Almagro*, with a few volunteers, whom he had, with ſome difficulty, perſuaded to engage in this expedition.

With theſe men they left *Gorgona*, and ſailed along the coaſt till they found themſelves in 30° ſouth latitude, having ſpent about two years in a voyage which, now the current and trade winds are known, is performed in as many weeks. In this paſſage, however, they took ſeveral *Indian* veſſels

veſſels of conſiderable value, and obtained ſuch intelligence of the wealth of the coaſt, that *Pizarro* reſolved to ſend *Pedro de Candia*, a man of good ſenſe and agreeable addreſs, to penetrate as far as he could into *Tumbez*, in order to learn whether the informations he had received were true.

Pedro rendered himſelf agreeable to the *Indians*, and by his good conduct was enabled to execute his commiſſion in the compleateſt manner. He returned ſafe to *Pizarro*; aſſured him that the country exceeded all imagination; that the wealth and ſplendor of the people, and the grandeur of their public edifices were incredible, and that great art and ſkill were viſible in theſe ſtructures, which were ſo rich, that the very walls were covered with gold and ſilver.

Upon this report *Pizarro* called a council of his people, when, after much deliberation, it was reſolved to return to *Panama*, were being enabled to give an account of the prodigious advantages to be reaped from an expedition made in a proper manner to *Peru*, it was to be hoped they ſhould find people who were willing to embark in ſuch an advantageous undertaking, and obtain ſuch ſupplies as would enſure their ſucceſs.

However, ſailing a few leagues farther along the coaſt, they made *Payta*, to which *Pizarro* gave the name of *Santa Cruz*; and finding this one of the beſt harbours they had obſerved on the coaſt of *Peru*, they caſt anchor, and going aſhore, found the natives extremely civil, and willing to take the trifles they had to give them,

in exchange for proviſions. They weigh
from this place, leaving a *Spaniard*, named *A*
phonſo de Molina, who had ſeparated from the
on ſhore; but ſoon after returning, he came o
board in one of the floats of that country, an
told them that he had been entertained wi
great civility by a woman of diſtinction, wh
was very deſirous of ſeeing the ſhip. Soon aft
the ſame woman ſent other floats to pilot the
into a ſafe part of the harbour; upon which *P*
zarro ſent *Molina*, with three other gentlemen
to invite this *Peruvian* lady on board; and ſh
coming, he treated her in the moſt elega
manner his circumſtances would admit. In re
turn ſhe invited *Pizarra* on ſhore, and the ne
morning, at his landing, received him with
great retinue, and conducted him and his attend
ants to an arbour; where ſhe entertained hi
at dinner, and afterwards with ſeveral *India*
diverſions.

It is pretended that *Pizarro* not only thanke
this *Peruvian* Lady for her great civilities
but made her a long ſpeech, in which he repre
ſented the excellencies of the *Chriſtian* religion
and the errors of idolatry; exhorting her an
her friends to ſubmit to the King of *Spain*, th
moſt powerful monarch upon earth: and tha
the *Peruvians* anſwered in general terms, tha
they were ſatisfied with the religion of their an
ceſtors, and knew of none who ought to com
mand their allegiance, but their own lawfu
Inca; but it does not appear that *Pizarro* ha
yet any opportunity of learning the *Peruvia*
language.

Fo

Barr entertained on Shore by a Peruvian Lady.

7 AP 55

However, the *Spaniards* returning on board, ſailed back for *Panama*, where he arrived towards the end of the year 1527, with ſeveral large pieces of gold, three *Indian* boys whom he intended to educate for interpreters, and ſome *Peruvian* ſheep. Thoſe who had before ridiculed this expedition as abſurd and ruinous, now confeſſed their error, and were deſirous of partaking of its advantages; but *Pizarro* being oppoſed by the Governor, who refuſed to allow his levying more men, and finding it neceſſary that he ſhould be ſupported by an authority ſuperior to his own, he, with the conſent of his partners, embarked for *Old Spain* to ſolicit the Emperor's protection, and ſuch powers as were neceſſary for promoting their ſchemes.

CHAP. II.

Pizarro *arrives in* Spain, *and meets with a favourable Reception from* Charles V. *who grants him Commiſſions and Powers for purſuing his Conqueſts. He returns to* Panama, *whence he continues his Courſe to* St. Matthew's Bay, *where he attacks the defenceleſs* Indians *without Provocation, which occaſions his being diſtreſſed for want of Proviſions. He lands at* Tumbez, *in ſpite of the Inhabitants, who, being terrified at his Cannon and Horſes, fly farther into the Country, leaving behind them immenſe Riches, which are ſeized by* Pizarro, *who builds a Fort upon the Coaſt.*

PIZARRO arrived without any remarkable accident at *Seville*, whence he proceeded to the court of the emperor *Charles* V. where he met with a very gracious reception, on his preſenting his Majeſty with ſome *Peruvians* in their proper habits, ſeveral gold and ſilver veſſels of the faſhion of the country, and two or three *Peruvian* ſheep. The Emperor took great pleaſure in hearing him relate the difficulties he had met with in his ſearch for *Peru*, and referred him to the council of the *Indies*, who ordered him to proceed in the conqueſt of that Empire, as far as 200 leagues to the ſouthward of *Tumbez*, which is at the bottom of the bay of *Guiaquil*. He alſo obtained the titles of Gover-

nor

nor and Captain General, with the offices of Adelantado, or Lieutenant, and of Alguazil-Major or Chief-Juſtice of *Peru*. This was directly contrary to his agreement with his partners; he having promiſed to obtain the ſecond of theſe titles for *Almagro*, and the laſt for his pilot, who had ſerved him with great fidelity and ſkill. However, he obtained for *Ferdinando de Luques* the title of Protector-General of the *Peruvians*, with the Emperor's promiſe of recommending him to the Pope, to be made Biſhop of *Tumbez*, of which place *Almagro* was however nominated Governor, with the title of Don; his baſtard ſon was legitimated; beſides, of the 13 men who remained with *Pizarro* in his diſtreſs on the iſland of *Gallo*, thoſe who were gentlemen, had the honour of knighthood; and ſuch as were not, where raiſed to the rank of gentlemen.

Theſe Commiſſions were granted at *Toledo* on the 26th of *July* 1528, and ſix Dominican Fryars were ordered to go over with *Pizarro*, as miſſionaries to aſſiſt in the converſion of the *Peruvians*; but though the Emperor hoped to obtain conſiderable advantages from this expedition, he did not advance a ſingle piece of money for the ſervice.

Pizarro having thus ſettled the affairs which brought him to *Spain*, paid a viſit to *Truxillo*, the place of his birth, where he found that his father had been many years married to a woman of a good family, and had three ſons grown up to man's eſtate, *Ferdinand*, *Gonzalo*, and *Juan*; and that his mother had been married

to a farmer, by whom ſhe had a ſon name*Francis Martin de Alcantara*; theſe entered in his ſervice, and, being greatly beloved in th neighbourhood, made great diſpatch in providing whatever he wanted; which having effected, he embarked with them at *Seville* in th month of *January* 1530, and ſafely arrived a *Nombre de Dios* on the coaſt of *Terra Firm* from whence he marched with his people ove land to the city of *Panama*, where *Almagro* wa ſo diſguſted at his having engroſſed all th honour and authority to himſelf, that he r fuſed to aſſiſt him in the intended expedition till *Pizarro* promiſed to relinquiſh the title Adelantado, and to give him an equal ſha in whatever they ſhould acquire. Upon whic conceſſions, *Almagro* agreed to aſſiſt him formerly; but though he, for the preſen ſmothered his reſentment, he never heart forgave him.

Three ſhips being prepared at *Panama*, board of which were 125 ſoldiers, 37 horſe with arms, ammunition, and ſtores, *Pizarro* ſail from thence; but meeting with contra winds, he found it impoſſible to keep the ſe with his horſes on board, and therefore ca to an anchor above 100 leagues to the nort ward of *Tumbez*, at a place which he called *Matthew's Bay*. He had here the inhuman to attack the natives without the leaſt provoc tion, and to make many of them priſoner when the reſt flying up into the country, plundered their towns, in which he found i menſe treaſures: for theſe people, being hon

the

themſelves, had no ſuſpicion of the *Spaniards*, and therefore took no care of hiding any thing from them.

By this cruel conduct *Pizarro* ſoon became diſtreſſed for want of proviſions; and loſing many of his men by ſickneſs, and the hardſhips they endured in marching through bogs, and thickets of mangroves, his forces were greatly diminiſhed; beſides many of his people contracted a kind of diſorder, which they imputed to the water they drank being poiſoned; for their faces and bodies were ſuddenly covered with warts, that were extremly painful, and when they were cut off, ſome of the men bled to death. He now too late percived his error, in not courting the friendſhip of the natives; and being in no condition to make a conqueſt of *Peru* with the forces he had left, ſent back his ſhips to *Panama* to raiſe more recruits. He alſo ſent to the ſame place 30,000 peſoes in gold, with a great number of emeralds, and might have ſent many more, had it not been for the folly of ſome of his people, who were ſo ſtupid as to break them in pieces with hammers, in order to try if they were not as hard as diamonds.

Francis Pizarro reſolved to continue in action till the arrival of his recruits, and, having in ſome meaſure informed himſelf of the ſtate of the country, thought he might take ſome advantage of the diſputes which ſubſiſted between the *Tumbezeves* and the inhabitants of *Puna*, a neighbouring iſland, by making friends of the latter. He therefore continued his march towards *Tumbez*, keeping the ſea ſtill in ſight, till coming

coming near the above iſland, he paſſed over to it with his men; however, diſagreeing with theſe iſlanders, he attacked and routed them. This he flattered himſelf, would have opened a way for his contracting a cloſe alliance with the *Tumbezenes*; becauſe finding 600 of the latter, with one of the moſt conſiderable perſons of the city, priſoners to the inhabitants of *Cuna*, he ſent them to *Tumbez*, with three of his own people. But, if the *Spaniſh* writers are to be credited, the *Tumbezenes* had the ingratitude and cruelty, to ſacrifice theſe three men to their idols; however, as *Pizarro* was ignorant of this circumſtance, he ſtill regarded the *Tumbezenes* as his allies, upon whoſe aſſiſtance he might conſtantly depend.

In the mean time, *Almagro* ſending *Pizarro* a conſiderable reinforcement from *Panama*, and *Ferdinand de Soto*, and other adventurers, alſo arriving with troops from *Nicaragua*, he thought himſelf in a condition to carry on the war upon the continent, eſpecially as he had ſome reaſon to expect, that he ſhould be ſupported by the *Tumbezenes*. Accordingly, having provided a ſufficient number of floats, he tranſported his troops to *Tumbez*; but loſt ſome of his men, on his landing, ſome floats being overſet by the ſurf which beat upon the ſhore, and, to his great ſurprize, ſeveral of his people were attacked and cut off by his ſuppoſed friends.

The *Spaniſh* writers have given different reaſons for this behavior in the *Tumbezenes*: ſome relate, that the natives obſerving that the *Spaniards* had enſlaved the inhabitants of *Puna*, ſub-

ſubverted their religion and government, demoliſhed their temples, and every thing they held ſacred, expected to be treated in the ſame manner, and therefore thought themſelves obliged to oppoſe their landing. But others inform us, that while the *Spaniards* were engaged in the reduction of *Puna*, a very great alteration happened in the affairs of the continent: *Atahualpa*, or, as he is generally called, *Atabaliba*, had defeated the forces of his brother *Hueſcar*, the Emperor, cut in pieces moſt of the inhabitants of *Tumbez*, and the neighbouring provinces, for adhering to him, and that the troops which oppoſed *Pizarro*'s landing in *Tumbez*, were thoſe detached by *Atabaliba* to that province, in order to repel the invaſion of the *Spaniards*.

But whatever were the motives of their oppoſing the deſcent of theſe ſtrangers, they were thrown into ſuch confuſion by the *Spaniſh* horſe and artillery, that they fled as the *Spaniards* advanced; and, after ſeveral thouſands of them had been ſlaughtered, were forced to abandon not only the city and caſtle, but even the whole valley of *Tumbez*, and to leave behind them all their gold and ſilver plate, emeralds, pearls, and other rich ſpoils which lay heaped up in the temple of the Sun and the Inca's palace, and were of ſuch immenſe value, that the *Spaniards* could ſcarcely believe their eyes, on their finding them ſo ſuddenly in their poſſeſſion; and ſo great was the conſternation of the Inca *Atabaliba*, and his whole court, when the fugitives related the ſlaughter made by the thunderer's

derer's ordnance, and the impoſſibility of eſcaping the *Spaniſh* horſes, that they concluded, if the *Spaniards* were not Gods, as they at firſt conjectured, they were certainly Devils, and that it was impoſſible for any human force to oppoſe them.

Pizarro ſoon received intelligence of the terror he had ſpread through the Inca's court, of which he reſolved to take advantage as ſoon as poſſible. He, however, thought proper to defer his march, till he had erected a ſlight fortreſs, that might ſerve him as a place of retreat and ſecurity, and in which the recruits he expected might be quartered. He accordingly built one upon the ſea coaſt, and gave it the name of St. *Michael*. This was performed in the year 1531, and was the firſt *Spaniſh* colony planted in *Peru*.

The forming of this ſettlement was certainly a very prudent ſtep, and there was no place on the whole coaſt ſo properly ſituated for it as that choſen by *Pizarro*. His next ſtep was alſo the wiſeſt he could poſſibly have taken, for he made an equal diviſion of all the gold and ſilver in his poſſeſſion, giving notes for it, payable at *Panama*, to thoſe who were to accompany him in his future conqueſt, while he delivered to ſuch as remained behind in the new colony their whole ſhares without abatement. By this eſtabliſhment he plainly diſcovered his intention to remain in the country, which it was evident he could not do but by force, and therefore the news of his erecting a fortified town, and compelling the *Indians* who lived near it to obey not only him, but the meaneſt of the *Spa-*

niards

niards, ſoon ſpread through the whole Empire, and engaged the two brothers, who were contending for the throne, to turn their eyes upon thoſe who might ſoon have the empire at their diſpoſal. But as the diſputes between theſe two brothers proved their ruin, and the chief cauſe that brought this great empire under ſubjection to the *Spaniards*, ſome account of the affairs of *Peru* is neceſſary to render this hiſtory perfectly intelligible.

CHAP. III.

An Account of the Diviſions in Peru *at the Time of* Pizarro's *diſcovering that Kingdom.* Pizarro *ſolicited for hi Aſſiſtance by the contending Parties.* Ferdinand Pizarro *and* Ferdinand Soto, *wait upon* Atabaliba *in Quality of Ambaſſidors, and meet with a favourable Reception. The Inca, attended by his Army, waits upon the* Spaniſh *General; but is inhumanly attacked, many of the Saldiers murdered in cold Blood, and himſelf taken Priſoner. He offers a Ranſom for his Life, which is accepted; but is afterwards baſely murdered under the Form of Law.*

THE Inca, or Emperor *Guayanacapa* was a Prince who diſtinguiſhed himſelf by his many virtues; but being ambitious, and generally ſucceſsful in war, made ſeveral conſiderable additions to his dominions, and in particular

ticular ſubdued the province of *Quito*; to confirm his title to which, he married the daughter of the late Sovereign, and by her had a ſon called *Atahualpa* or *Atabaliba*, to whom at his death he bequeathed the crown of *Quito*, on account of its being independent of the dominions of the Inca's, and its deſcending to him in right of his mother. But *Hueſcar*, *Guayanacapa*'s eldeſt ſon, who ſucceeded to his father's hereditary dominions, inſiſted upon *Atabaliba*'s ſurrendering the kingdom of *Quito*, promiſing, in return, to give him a ſhare of his father's treaſures, and to aſſign him lands for his ſubſiſtence. *Atabaliba* refuſed to conſent to this propoſal; but offered to pay homage to his brother *Hueſcar* for the crown.

In conſequence of this diſpute both parties had recourſe to arms, and a general engagement enſued which laſted for three days, and was as bloody as it was obſtinate. At length the forces of *Atabaliba* were defeated, and he himſelf taken priſoner; but while the guards were immerſed in the rejoicings and feſtivals which followed the victory, he found means to break a hole through the wall of the houſe wherein he was confined, by which he made his eſcape, and returned to his own ſubjects, whom he found diſpirited by their laſt defeat. He, however, ſoon revived their courage, by aſſuring them that his father had appeared to him in priſon, and by changing him into a ſerpent, had given him an opportunity of ſliding through a little hole in the wall.

What to a ſenſible people would appear ridiculous, is, to a ſuperſtitious and credulous

multitude a miracle. This ſtory inſtantly ſpread through the whole Empire: The people in general took up arms in his defence, and he had ſoon a much larger body of forces than ever. He now defeated two or three armies that oppoſed him, levelled with the ground the place where he had been impriſoned, and on his arrival at *Tumbez* attempted to make himſelf maſter of the iſland of *Puna*, but without ſucceſs; when, leaving that iſland, he marched with all his forces to give *Hueſcar* battle, who was advancing towards him with a prodigious army. *Atabaliba* hearing of his approach, ſent two of his beſt officers with 3 or 4000 light armed troops to obſerve his brother's ſtrength, who, on their drawing near to *Hueſcar*'s camp, ſtruck out of the high road to avoid being diſcovered.

At this very inſtant *Hueſcar*, with ſome of his chief courtiers and principal officers, had retired into the ſame bye road to ſhun the noiſe and buſtle of his army; when *Atabaliba*'s men obſerving the royal ſtandard, laid hold of this opportunity of putting a ſpeedy end to the war, and immediately attacking *Hueſcar*, defeated his guards, and made him priſoner.

Theſe victors were however ſoon in as much danger as the vanquiſhed, for *Hueſcar*'s army being informed of what had paſſed, ſurrounded this handful of men, and threatened to cut them inſtantly in pieces. In this extremity they told *Hueſcar*, that if he did not immediately order his army to retire, they would cut off his head, after which they were determined to die upon the ſpot. At the ſame time they obſerved, that

he need be under no apprehenſion from his confinement, ſince all *Atabaliba* required, was the permiſſion to enjoy his own kingdom of *Quito*, which being ſecured to him, he was too generous to detain him. On this *Hueſcar* ordered his principal officers to draw off their forces to *Cuzco*, where the Incas kept their court, and this command was immediately obeyed.

Things were in this ſituation when *Pizarro* entered *Peru*. He was firſt ſolicited to aſſiſt *Hueſcar*; but anſwered in general terms that he was on his march to aſſiſt the diſtreſſed, and ſee juſtice impartially adminiſtred. He was afterwards honoured with a ſolemn embaſſy from *Atabaliba*, to deſire his alliance and friendſhip. Upon which he immediately reſolved to viſit that prince at *Caxamalca*, where he then was. The *Spaniards*, in their way thither, ſuffered extremely by marching through a parched barren deſert, that was about 20 leagues over, after which they entered into a rich fertile country, where they ſtaid to refreſh themſelves, and then continued their journey.

The *Spaniards* were ſoon after met by other Ambaſſadors, who came to compliment *Pizarro*, and to preſent him, in the name of the Inca, with a pair of gold buſkins richly ornamented, and bracelets of the ſame metal, ſet with emeralds, which he was deſired to put on, at his obtaining an audience of *Atabaliba*, who, by ſeeing his own preſents, would eaſily know him. Theſe Ambaſſadors alſo made him ſeveral other valuable preſents, and brought with them great plenty

lenty of proviſions, which were much wanted y the army.

The chief of this embaſſy was of the race of he Incas, and behaved with great politeneſs, hich the *Spaniards* attributed to fear, in which ney were certainly right, though they did not and in awe of them ſo much on account of eir arms as from a religious motive; for they uperſtitiouſly imagined that the *Spaniards* were e deſcendants of the Sun. For they had an ld tradition, which had been univerſally re-eived, that the elder ſon of one of their Incas, ho had lived many ages before, had ſeen a range kind of phantom who called himſelf *irachoca*, or offſpring of the Sun. His dreſs nd appearance were intirely different from hat of the *Peruvians*, who have no beard, and hoſe clothes reached no lower than their nees; but this phantom had a long beard, a arment of a very unuſual make, which reached own to his feet, and he led in his hand an ani-al that was abſolutely unknown to the young rince. This fable was ſo univerſally believed, nd ſo firmly rooted in the minds of the *Peru-ians*, that they no ſooner ſaw a *Spaniard* with beard, his legs covered, and holding his horſe y the bridle, than they cried out *See there is the ca* Virachoca, *or the Son of the Sun.* This opi-ion, joined to the diſſenſions between the two rothers, greatly facilitated *Pizarro*'s conqueſts.

The *Spaniards* on their arrival at *Caxamalca*, ound that *Atabaliba* had retired to a place at ſmall diſtance. Upon which the General ſent

to him his brother *Ferdinand Pizarro* and *Ferdinand Soto* in quality of Ambassadors.

They were received with very great ceremony, and immediately introduced into the royal presence, which struck the *Spaniards* with joy and reverence; for not only the Inca, but all who were with him, glittered with gold and jewels.

As soon as the *Spaniards* approached *Atabaliba*, who was seated in a chair of massy gold, they saluted him in the *Spanish* fashion; with which appearing well pleased, he arose and embraced them; and a golden chair being brought for each, they sat and were served by two beautiful Princesses, in vessels of gold set with emeralds. They had afterwards a collation of fruit, which being over, *Ferdinand Pizarro*, by means of a wretched interpreter brought from *Puna*, made a long speech, in which he told the Inca, that *Francis Pizarro*, a famous General, was come as Ambassador from the High Priest of the *Christian* church, and from *Charles* V. the most potent Emperor upon earth, to deliver him and his subjects from the tyranny of the Devil, and to point out to him the right road to heaven. To this the Inca they supposed made a pathetic reply, as he drew tears from the eyes of those who understood him, and he concluded with telling them that he would come the following day to hold a personal conference with their General. They could collect but little from his discourse; and, from the absurd manner in which their interpreter explained what the Inca had said, they had rea-

son

ſon to believe that he had received a very imperfect explanation of *Ferdinand Pizarro*'s oration.

Francis Pizarro being informed of this intended viſit, divided his cavalry, which amounted to 60 men, into three troops of 20 each, and poſted them behind an old wall, that their ſudden appearance might have the greater effect; and having put himſelf at the head of his infantry, which amounted to only 100 men, waited for the coming of *Atabaliba*, who advanced in regular order with his army, which was divided into four battalions conſiſting of 8000 men each; and, as ſoon as they drew near, the Inca, addreſſing himſelf to his officers, ſaid, "Theſe people are meſſengers of the Gods, let "us be ſeen to do nothing to offend them; "but, on the contrary, uſe our utmoſt endeavours to gain them by civilities."

As he approached, Father *Vincent de Valverda* advanced from the *Spaniards*, carrying in one hand a croſs, and in the other his Breviary. At his appearance, the Inca ſeemed much ſurprized; but received him with great reſpect, and ordered a chair for him; when the Father began a long diſcourſe which was tranſlated by the above wretched interpreter; while the Inca liſtened very attentively to his harangue; in which he gave an account of the myſteries of the *Chriſtian* faith, the power of the Pope, St. *Peter*'s ſucceſſor, and the univerſal monarchy of the Emperor *Charles* V. to which it was neceſſary that the Inca ſhould ſubmit, for otherwiſe God would harden his heart, as he did *Pharoah*'s

and then the *Spaniards* were to inflict upon him all the plagues of *Egypt*.

As the Inca had never heard of theſe ſubjects, this diſſertation muſt have had all the appearance of nonſenſe, yet it was rendered ſtill more ridiculous by its being delivered through a channel ſo deſpicable and barbarous as *Pizarro*'s interpreter. However, the Inca made ſome ſort of reply, which was interpreted ſo badly, that the Prieſt knew no more of the Emperor's meaning, than the Emperor did of his. Thus a ſcene of confuſion immediately enſued, which was encreaſed by a tumult cauſed by ſome *Spaniards*, who obſerving an *Indian* idol upon a tower, richly adorned with gold, ſilver and precious ſtones, their avarice would not ſuffer them to wait longer, and therefore they fell to plundering it, in which they were at firſt oppoſed by the *Indians*, till the Inca, whoſe command was to them equal to a divine law, cried out, That they ſhould do nothing to offend the Children of the Sun.

Father *Vincent* hearing the noiſe of this tumult, turned about, and dropping his croſs and Breviary, ran in haſte to appeaſe it, when ſome of the perfidious *Spaniards* perceiving the croſs trampled under foot, cried out, "An inſult on Chriſtianity," and inſtantly falling upon the *Indians*, committed a moſt dreadful ſlaughter, and the horſe ſuddenly appearing, bore down all before them; the poor *Indians* falling tame ſacrifices to their treachery without making the leaſt reſiſtance. *Francis Pizarro* at this inſtant putting himſelf at the head of the horſe, advanced

vanced in perſon to ſeize *Atabaliba*, and laying hold of his robe, dragged the Inca from the chariot in which he ſat on the ſhoulders of his attendants. At which inſtant, one of the *Spaniards* attempting to ſtrike the Emperor with his ſword, wounded *Pizarro*, which was all the *Spaniſh* blood ſpilt at this ſcene of cool, mercileſs ſlaughter, in which about 5000 *Indians* were inhumanly maſſacred, without attempting to uſe the weapons they held in their hands; for they thought every command of the Inca, a part of their religion, and of the divine law, though it was attended with the loſs of their lives. There principal attention was fixed upon their Prince, and many of them died, while eagerly endeavouring to ſupport his chariot, to which the Inca clung while the cruel and treacherous *Pizarro* dragged him from it. This happened on the 3d of *May* 1533, a day kept ſacred by the *Romiſh* Church, in honour of finding the croſs of *Chriſt*, after its having been many years buried.

When this horrid ſcene was over, *Pizarro* cauſed the Inca to be conveyed to his own quarters, and directed that the ſpoils of the field ſhould be brought before him, which conſiſted of large gold and ſilver veſſels, fine garments, jewels and ornaments, belonging to the Inca, the royal family and great officers. There were alſo taken many of the women of quality, and ſome of the conſecrated virgins. That very day *Pizarro* impiouſly directed, that thankſgivings to God ſhould be offered, upon the very ſpot where the earth was covered with the dead bodies

bodies of the poor *Peruvians* they had thus inhumanly murdered and plundered.

The next day *Pizarro* ſent a detachment of his forces to plunder the Inca's camp, where he met with an immenſe quantity of riches, though the *Peruvian* Generals are ſaid to have removed 3000 loads of gold and ſilver, before the *Spaniards* arrived there. To induce the *Indians* not to carry off or conceal any more of their treaſures, *Pizarro* cauſed it to be proclaimed that the Inca was alive, and that they were at liberty to come and wait upon him as uſual. Upon which many of the Generals and great officers returned to *Caxamalca* to attend their captive Sovereign. He alſo cauſed the Inca's women to be brought to him, and ſuffered him to be ſerved in the ſame manner as before his misfortunes, though he kept him in fetters, at which the Inca could not forbear ſometimes ſhewing his reſentment.

Atabaliba obſerving the inſatiable thirſt of the *Spaniards* after gold and ſilver, and being very deſirous of liberty, made them an offer of filling a large room in the caſtle of *Caxamalca* with theſe metals, as high as an ordinary man could reach his hand: a propoſal which amazed the *Spaniards*, and which they gladly accepted. For this purpoſe he deſired that ſome *Spaniſh* officers might be ſent with his own people to *Cuzco*, and other cities, to fetch the treaſures depoſited there, and at the ſame time iſſued his orders, that the *Spaniards* who were diſpatched to thoſe places ſhould be hoſpitably entertained in the countries through which they paſſed,

paſſed, and receive all the aſſiſtance his ſubjects could give them.

In the mean while *Almagro*, having inliſted 150 men at *Panama*, had embarked with them for *Peru*, in order to reinforce *Pizarro*, but had been obliged by contrary winds to land at Cape *Franciſco*, where he was joined by another party of the *Spaniards*, who were going to ſhare *Pizarro*'s fortune; by which means his whole body amounted to between two and 300; but having loſt by ſickneſs and fatigue 30 or 40 of his men, he at length arrived at the *Spaniſh* colony of St. *Michael*'s, where he was informed that *Pizarro* had made the Emperor *Atabaliba* priſoner, and taken poſſeſſion of a vaſt treaſure; when fearing that he would refuſe him his dividend, he conſulted his officers, whether they ſhould not proceed in queſt of ſome new diſcovery independently of *Pizarro*; but a faithful account of this deliberation being privately diſpatched to *Pizarro*, by *Almagro*'s ſecretary, he immediately ſent ſeveral very obliging meſſages to *Almagro* to aſſure him of his integrity, and to invite him to join him: at the ſame time he let him know, that there were ſome people who endeavoured to ſow diviſions between them, and intreated him to be on his guard, as that might end in the ruin of one or both of them, as well as the deſtruction of their enterprize; and to ſupport this advice, ſent him the letter he had received from the ſecretary, which *Almagro* no ſooner ſaw, than he cauſed him to be hanged.

The

The report of *Almagro*'s arrival increaſed *Atabaliba*'s ſolicitude about his liberty, for he wiſely judged, that the inſolence of the *Spaniards* would be augmented in proportion to their ſtrength; he therefore haſtened the bringing in of the treaſure he had offered for his ranſom, that he might obtain his liberty before *Pizarro* was joined by *Almagro*; but, another accident happened about the ſame time, which he apprehended might prove ſtill more fatal to him; for the *Spaniſh* officers who were ſent with his people to *Cuzco*, happening to paſs through the town, where *Hueſcar* his brother was confined in priſon, went to ſee him, and told him what *Atabaliba* had offered for his ranſom; when that Prince replied, that he had been unjuſtly depoſed by his brother, who had no right either to the Empire or the treaſures he had promiſed; and that, as he had heard one principal deſign of their coming was to relieve the diſtreſſed, he did not doubt but they would releaſe him from his captivity, and reſtore him to his throne, which he ſhould not only gratefully acknowledge, but would give them more treaſure than it was in the uſurper's power to beſtow; for his loyal ſubjects had buried moſt of their gold and ſilver on his being made priſoner, but would readily produce it again, and pay it for his ranſom.

Pizarro's meſſengers liſtened to his overtures, and promiſed the Inca that juſtice ſhould be done him; but, however, left that Prince in priſon and continued their journey to *Cuzco*. Mean while *Atabaliba*, being informed of theſe overtures,

overtures, resolved to put his brother to death; but reflecting that the *Spaniards* might make this a pretence for taking away his own life, he resolved to sound *Pizarro*'s inclination upon the subject; which he did by informing him, with the appearance of much affection and concern, that his brother had been murdered. But finding that *Pizarro* was not at all moved at this news, and only replied, that this was the fortune of war, and that the lives of captives were at the conqueror's disposal, he dispatched an express for putting *Huescar* to death, and his orders were immediately executed; but in what manner is still doubtful, some affirming that he was drowned, and others that his body was cut into small bits to prevent his subjects paying the usual honours to his corpse. However, it is reported that when the murderers came into *Huescar*'s presence, and let him know their business, he expressed himself to them in these terms; "It is true my reign is but short; but the "person by whose order I am put to death, "who was born and ought to have continued "my subject, will not long enjoy that power "which he endeavours to purchase at the ex"pence of the blood of his brother and his "lawful Prince."

His death was no sooner known than the *Peruvians* made great lamentations, and cried to Heaven for vengeance on his murderers. It is even said, that some desired the *Spaniards* to revenge it. Mean while the officers who were sent to *Cuzco* were, on their arrival there,

adored

adored by the people as the true deſcendants of the Sun; but they ſoon perceived that they ought to deduce their original from a baſer fountain, and they were afflicted to find that ſo profligate a race of men, who trampled upon every thing they held ſacred, and whoſe avarice ſeemed to exceed all bounds, ſhould become the maſters of their country, and from that time they meditated how they might throw off the intolerable yoke they perceived the *Spaniards* were about to lay upon them. They durſt not, however, diſobey the commands of *Atabaliba*, but having amaſſed a conſiderable quantity of treaſure, they ſent it to *Caxamalca*, probably with a view of aſſerting their liberties to greater advantage when they ſhould have procured their Inca's releaſe.

Pizarro being informed that a great quantity of gold, ſilver and emeralds, was lodged in the Temple of the Inviſible God, he diſpatched his three brothers thither with the *Peruvian* officers deputed by *Atabaliba*; but the Prieſts of his deity being informed, that ſome of their temples had been ruined by the *Spaniards*, endeavoured to prevent their ſuffering the like misfortune, by ſending away 400 carriers loaded with gold, ſilver and jewels, before the *Spaniards* arrived, which were either buried in the earth or carried to ſuch a diſtance that the *Spaniards* could never diſcover them. *Ferdinand Pizarro* however, found as much plate in this temple as amounted to 9000 crowns, beſides what was embezzled by the ſoldiers.

Almagro being by this time advanced into

the neighbourhood of *Caxamalca*, *Pizarro* went out to meet him, and received him with all poſſible marks of affection and eſteem, offering him ſuch a ſhare in the ſpoils as made him perfectly eaſy. But his ſoldiers, who expected to divide the booty with thoſe who had ſerved under *Pizarro*, were ready to mutiny on their being told, that they were intitled to no part of it; but they were ſoon appeaſed by *Pizarro*'s agreeing to diſtribute 100,000 ducats among them. The reſt of the plunder, after the Emperor's fifth was deducted, was divided by *Pizarro* among his officers and ſoldiers; and it is ſaid, that after he had reſerved the Inca's golden chair for his own uſe, he diſtributed as much gold and ſilver plate among the ſoldiers, as amounted to above 1,500,000 crowns; which, conſidering the value of gold and ſilver at that time, was more than 15,000,000 of crowns now. But, as large as this ſum appears in round numbers, it will yet be found more extraordinary and ſurprizing, if we conſider among how ſmall a number of men it was divided *.

Ferdinand Pizarro was now choſen as the fitteſt perſon to go to *Europe*, and wait on the Emperor *Charles* V. with his ſhare of the treaſure; when about 60 of the private men inſiſted upon their diſcharge, that they might go home, and peaceably enjoy the wealth they had

* It appears from good memoirs, that upon this diviſion, each horſeman had to his ſhare near 2000 ounces of gold, and the meaneſt ſoldier the value of 2000l. ſterling, and that even ſome of the foot had twice that ſum.

obtained; but this was violently oppoſed b
Almagro, and moſt of the council, who alled
ged it would greatly weaken their little army
But *Francis Pizarro* over-ruled this oppoſition
by obſerving, that nothing could be more po
litical than allowing them to return home; for
as the meaneſt ſoldier would depart ſo ver
rich, they might be certain of gaining ten me
for every one they loſt.

Ferdinand Pizarro, before his departure
went to take his leave of *Atabaliba*, with whom
he was in greater eſteem than any of the *Spa*
niſh officers: the Emperor therefore was muc
concerned at his departure, and ſaid, "M
" Lord, you are going home, which is cer
" tainly matter of joy to you, though it fil
" me with grief; for I already apprehend
" that, before your return, the man with on
" eye, meaning *Almagro*, and the other wit
" the great belly, which was the King's trea
" ſurer, will put an end to my life: let u
" then take our laſt farewel."

His conjecture was indeed juſt, for the *Spa*
niards, who had been ſent for the reſt of *Ata*
baliba's ranſom, making a report of the prod
gious quantities of gold they had brought, an
the reaſons they had for believing that muc
greater were concealed, *Almagro* gave it as h
opinion, that they ſhould wait no longer, b
diſpatch the Inca, and then make as much ha
as poſſible to get into their poſſeſſion all th
gold in *Peru*; a cruel reſolution, which, thoug
Francis Pizarro at firſt ſeemed to reject wi
horror. he afterwards gave it his approb
tio

tion, on account of his being treated with ſome degree of contempt by *Atabaliba*, and his giving a viſible preference to other officers in the *Spaniſh* army, the reaſon of which is very ſingular, and cannot fail of giving pleaſure to the judicious reader.

Atabaliba was a Prince of great penetration, and therefore laboured to obtain as perfect a knowledge as poſſible of the manners, cuſtoms, and abilities of the *Spaniards*, in order that he might be the better able to deal with them, if, upon the payment of the ſum propoſed for his ranſom, they ſhould actually reſtore him to liberty. What particularly puzzled him, and ſeemed moſt unaccountable, was their having the art of writing and reading; he not being able to comprehend whether it was a natural endowment, or was acquired by labour and application. In order to obtain ſatisfaction, he aſked one of the *Spaniſh* ſoldiers, whether he could expreſs the name of God upon his thumb-nail: the man readily anſwered that he could, and accordingly wrote it; after which the Inca went to ſeveral of the Captains and ſoldiers, and ſhewing them his thumb-nail, aſked if they knew what that mark ſignified? and from their anſwers, began to entertain an opinion, that reading and writing were natural to the nation; but *Francis Pizarro* falling in his way, he aſked him the ſame queſtion, when being able neither to read nor write, he bluſhed and turned away without reſolving the queſtion; which not only changed *Atabaliba*'s opinion, with reſpect to theſe accompliſhments, which he now plainly

ſaw were the fruits of education; but gave him a very low opinion of the general, whoſe original he was perſuaded muſt have been but mean, ſince he was in this reſpect exceeded in knowledge by the pooreſt of his ſoldiers.

His contempt for *Pizarro*, however, laid the foundation of his ruin, which was compleated by the villiany of the wretched interpreter already mentioned, who, falling in love with one of *Atabaliba*'s wives, that Monarch was ſo incenſed, that he let *Pizarro* know, that the fellow deſerved to be put to death, which the General turned into jeſt. Upon this the interpreter reſolved to be revenged, and accuſed the Inca of contriving the deſtruction of the *Spaniards*, when the General ordered that this wild and ridiculous ſtory ſhould be digeſted into a formal accuſation; commiſſioners were appointed to try *Atabaliba*, and the following charge was with great formality brought againſt him. That the late Inca being his eldeſt brother and lawful Sovereign, and himſelf a baſtard, he had cauſed him to be depoſed and impriſoned, and afterwards uſurped his throne. That he had cauſed his ſaid brother to be murdered. That *Atabaliba* was an idolater. That he cauſed his ſubjects to ſacrifice men and children. That he had raiſed unjuſt wars, and been guilty of the blood of many people. That he kept a great many concubines. That he had exacted taxes and tribute of the *Peruvians*, ſince the *Spaniards* were become in poſſeſſion of his country, and had even conſumed and embezzled the public treaſure; and that he had incited the

Indians

7 AP 53

Atabalipa Strangled ?

Indians to rebel and make war againſt the *Spaniards* ſince he had been their priſoner.

Upon theſe abſurd and ridiculous articles, this Sovereign Prince was tried, in the midſt of his own dominions, by the invaders of his country; and, what ſtill adds to the abſurdity, was tried, not by the laws of *Peru*, or by the law of nations eſtabliſhed by any country, but by thoſe of *Spain*; and being found guilty, was condemned to be burnt alive.

However, in juſtice to the reſt of the *Spaniards*, it ought to be obſerved, that almoſt all the perſons of family and diſtinction in the army declared againſt this vile proceeding, and even delivered a proteſt in writing againſt it.

Father *Vincent*, after being concerned in this mock ſhew of juſtice, undertook the Inca's converſion; and the argument he uſed to induce him to be baptized, was worthy of ſuch a preacher. He promiſed, that if he would die a Chriſtian, inſtead of being burned, he ſhould be only ſtrangled, which had the deſired effect, and, to the eternal diſhonour of all who were concerned in this iniquitous proceeding, he was baptized in the evening, and ſtrangled the next morning.

There are ſome who have pretended, though without any proof, that the *Indians* inſiſted upon *Atabaliba*'s death, to retaliate that of his brother *Hueſcar*; but it appears that there is not the leaſt foundation for ſuch an aſſertion; for after *Hueſcar*'s death, *Atabaliba* was univerſally acknowledged as the lawful Inca throughout the whole Empire; and, on his being mur-

dered by the *Spaniards*, the *Peruvians* began every where to act offenſively againſt them, which they had never done before.

CHAP. IV.

The divided State of Peru, *after the Inca's Death. Several* Spaniards *killed in an Ambuſh, and ſome Priſoners taken; who were ſet at Liberty, upon very generous Conditions.* Manca Capac *acknowledged Inca of* Peru. Pedro de Alverado *enters* Peru *with an Army, but is prevailed upon to retire to his Government in* Mexico. Pizarro *lays the Foundations of the Cities of* Lima *and* Truxillo. Almagro *aſſumes the Goverment of* Cuzco; *but is perſuaded to reſign it.*

THE events that followed the death of the Inca *Atabaliba*, plainly ſhew that human nature is the ſame in all countries and climates, and that, whilſt ſome are actuated by principles of honour and love to their country, others regulate their conduct by views of ambition. *Rumnavi*, one of *Atabaliba*'s Generals who had retired from the bloody ſlaughter at *Caxamalca*, with the rear-guard of his army, ſeized upon the province of *Quito*, and no ſooner heard of his Sovereign's death, than he cut to pieces ſuch of his officers as he believed firmly attached to his late maſter; while *Quiſquis*, another of his Generals, who had been *Hueſcar*'s executioner, attempted, with a ſtill larger army, to ſecure

ſecure part of the province of *Cuzco*; yet had ſo little bravery, that he fled before a handful of *Spaniards* who were ſent in purſuit of him, but a few of theſe puſhing too far, and falling into his hands, he cauſed them to be put to death.

This General, juſtly apprehending that it would be impoſſible for him to maintain himſelf againſt the other *Indian* commanders, as well as againſt the *Spaniards*, contrived to get into his power, a younger brother of the Inca's, whoſe name was *Pallu*, whom he perſuaded to take the title of Emperor; but this young Prince diſcovered a greatneſs of ſoul worthy of the higheſt praiſe, and generouſly told *Quiſquis*, that he ſcorned to derive that authority from the miſery of the Empire, which he could not hope for in better times, and eſteemed it far more honourable to be thought a good man, than a bad Monarch; which had ſuch an effect upon *Quiſquis* that though he had this Prince in his power, he allowed him to retire. Whereupon he went to *Francis Pizarro*, and told him that the true heir of the Empire was his eldeſt brother *Manco Capac*, and that if, as he pretended, he propoſed to do juſtice, and to protect thoſe who had right on their ſide, he ought to declare in favour of that Prince, who had already a good army, and who, with the aſſiſtance of the *Spaniards*, would infallibly reſtore the luſtre of the imperial diadem.

We can ſcarce form an idea of a country in a worſe ſituation than *Peru* was now in, or a nation in greater diſtraction than its inhabitants. They were diſpirited with ſuperſtitious fears of the

the *Spaniards*, which prevented their conſidering their own ſtrength; and, on the other hand, were divided into differnt factions, headed by different Princes, at a time when union alone was abſolutely neceſſary for their preſervation. *Pizarro*, after having gratified his reſentment, thought fit to treat the corpſe of *Atabaliba* with the reſpect due to a ſovereign Prince; he celebrated his funeral with great ſolemnity, and went into mourning for him; but he ſoon diſcovered how deteſtable this murder rendered him in the opinion of the natives. The two factions inſtantly united againſt him under *Manco Capac*, the brother and heir of *Hueſcar*, who was proclaimed Inca at *Cuzco*. Upon which *Pizarro* proclaimed *Toparpa*, the ſon of *Atabaliba*; cauſed him to wear the imperial coronet; to be treated with the ſame honours as his father, and iſſued ſuch orders in his name as were for the intereſt of the *Spaniards*. This Emperor, however, died ſoon after; when *Pizarro* imagining that nothing could eſtabliſh the dominion of the *Spaniards* in *Peru*, more than his obtaining poſſeſſion of *Cuzco* its capital, he began his march thither with all his forces, which conſiſted of near 400 men, beſides ſuch as were ſtiled confederate *Indians*.

Mean while *Atauchi*, brother to *Atabaliba*, having collected a large quantity of treaſure, to purchaſe his brother's ranſom, brought it to *Caxamalca*; but finding *Atabaliba* murdered, and the *Spaniards* marched from thence, reſolved to be revenged, and joining his forces with ſome *Peruvian* Generals, ſurprized the *Spaniards* upon

upon their march to *Cuzco*, killed ſome of them, and took ſeveral priſoners, among whom was *Sanco de Cuellar*, who had drawn up the proceſs againſt *Atabaliba*, and attended his execution. With theſe priſoners the *Indian* Generals returned to *Caxamalca*, where they cauſed *De Cuellar* to be ſtrangled on the very ſpot where the Emperor was put to death; but being informed that ſome of the other priſoners had proteſted againſt the Inca's murder, they not only ſpared their lives, but ordered the wounded to be cured, and diſmiſſed them with conſiderable preſents, on their ſigning the following articles. That all acts of hoſtility ſhould be forgiven on both ſides. That, for the future, peace ſhould be inviolably maintained between the *Peruvians* and *Spaniards*. That the former ſhould allow *Manco Capac* to aſcend the throne of *Peru*. That ſuch *Indians* as they held in chains ſhould be ſet at liberty. That for the future, no *Peruvian* ſhould be loaded with fetters, and that the *Spaniards* ſhould not treat them as ſlaves but as freemen, and be allowed to entertain *Peruvians* as hired ſervants. That all the laws of their country ſhould be inviolably obſerved, that were not repugnant to thoſe of *Chriſtianity*; and that this treaty ſhould be ratified by the *Spaniſh* General and his ſovereign the Emperor of *Germany*. The *Spaniards* inſiſted on having the free exceſs of their religion, on having land aſſigned them for their ſubſiſtance, and free liberty of trade, without paying any taxes. All which were granted them.

But

But, reaſonable and generous as theſe articles were, on the ſide of the *Indians*, *Pizarro* and *Almagro* poſitively refuſed to ratify them, and would hear of nothing but an abſolute ſubmiſſion of their country and perſons to the will of the *Spaniards*; and therefore continuing his march towards *Cuzco*, was again attacked at ſome difficult paſſes in the mountains, by ſeveral parties of *Peruvians*: but finding themſelves unable to reſiſt their fire-arms and horſes, they fled to the capital, declaring that it was in vain for any human force to oppoſe the *Spaniards*, who were armed with thunder and lightning; upon which the inhabitants of *Cuzco* fled with their wives and children, and what was moſt valuable to them, to the woods and mountains. *Pizarro* entered the city without oppoſition, in *October* 1532, and though the citizens had time to carry off their goods, met with an immenſe treaſure; and, as it was the cuſtom of the country to bury with their great men the beſt part of the riches they poſſeſſed, theſe conquerors, who made no difficulty in rifling ſepulchres, found as much wealth in the tombs, as in the habitations of the living; whence the plunder of the city has been computed to amount at leaſt to the full value of *Atabaliba*'s ranſom.

Pizarro having now made himſelf maſter of the capital, thought fit to invite the inhabitants to return to their dwellings, as he juſtly concluded that if the people were rendered deſperate, the whole power of the Empire might aſſemble againſt him. The *Indians* accepted this invitation, and returned to their houſes, and

and even the Inca made ſome overtures, intimating that he would be content to embrace the *Chriſtian* religion, and hold his dominions of the Emperor of *Germany*, provided that neither he nor his ſubjects ſhould for the future be moleſted either in their perſons or eſtates. When *Pizarro* giving him all poſſible encouragement, he came in perſon to *Cuzco*, where he was proclaimed Inca, and inveſted with that dignity in the ſame manner as his predeceſſors, *Pizarro* at the ſame time agreeing to obſerve the articles already mentioned.

The *Spaniards* indeed found themſelves under the neceſſity of taking theſe pacific meaſures, from their receiving intelligence that all the ſouthern provinces of *Peru* were aſſembling againſt them, in behalf of the Inca *Manco Capac*, and from *Pizarro*'s knowing that *Rumnavi*, *Quiſquis*, and other *Peruvian* Generals had taken poſſeſſion of *Quito*, which had a little before obliged *Pizarro* to ſend a conſiderable detachment under the command of *Sebaſtian Belancazar* to reinforce the colony at St. *Michael*'s, and to make head againſt the *Peruvian* Generals in *Quito*.

Belancazar, upon his arrival at St. *Michael*'s, found a large reinforcement of volunteers, come from different parts of the *Spaniſh* ſettlements in order to obtain a ſhare in the riches of *Peru*, and out of theſe he choſe 120 foot and 80 horſe, which he incorporated into his own army, and then marched directly towards *Quito*, to make himſelf maſter of the riches of the late Emperor, moſt of which remained there. The

Indian

Indian General who commanded in that province, did all that lay in his power to harraſs and fatigue the *Spaniſh* army, without coming to a deciſive action; but finding that *Belancazar* continued to advance directly towards the capital, he cauſed all the late Emperor's riches to be brought into the hall of the palace, and then ſetting fire to it, abandoned the city.

While *Francis Pizarro* and his officers were thus employed in the reduction of ſeveral provinces of the Empire, they were ſuddenly interrupted by an unexpected invaſion of their countrymen. Don *Pedro de Alverado*, who had diſtinguiſhed himſelf with *Cortes* in the conqueſt of *Mexico*, hearing of the vaſt wealth obtained by theſe adventurers, was reſolved to come in for a ſhare; and being poſſeſſed of the province of *Guatimala*, he fitted out ſeveral ſhips; and, to increaſe his ſtrength, ſeized two veſſels more that were actually fitting out in one of the ports of *Nicaragua* for the ſervice of *Pizarro*, and on board theſe ſhips he embarked 500 horſe and foot, which were as good troops as any in *America*. With this force he landed at *Puerto Vejo*, but endured great hardſhips in his voyage.

He then croſſed a part of the *Andes* near the equator, in which expedition his army alſo ſuffered greatly; but after loſing 60 of his men by the coldneſs of the weather, he arrived in the neighbourhood of St. *Michael*'s, where he refreſhed his troops, and was preparing for continuing his progreſs into the heart of the country; but was met in the valley of *Riobamba*, by a large body of troops ſent by *Pizarro*, under

the command of *Almagro*, who had joined *Benalcazar*. A battle now ſeemed almoſt inevitable; but *Alverado* foreſeeing the conſequences that muſt attend an action, let victory remain on either ſide, willingly entered into a negotiation; and a private treaty was ſigned between them, by which *Alverado* agreed to return to his own government, in conſideration of his being paid 100,000 peſoes of gold to defray the expence of fitting out his fleet; and promiſing never to attempt an invaſion of *Peru* during the lives of *Pizarro* or *Almagro*. It was alſo ſtipulated that each party ſhould be left at liberty to proſecute their ſeperate diſcoveries, for their own advantage; by which means *Alverado* provided for ſuch of the people as deſired to remain in *Peru*. Things being thus amicably ſettled, *Alverado* and *Almagro* joined their forces, in order to march to *Cuzco* to procure *Pizarro*'s ratification of the treaty.

It is neceſſary to obſerve, that the peace between the new Inca and *Pizarro* was concluded after *Almagro* had marched from *Cuzco*, and conſequently he was at this time intirely ignorant of it, and that the confirmation of it, had not yet reached *Quiſquis*, who was encamped near *Caxamalca*, and waited in expectation of hearing it confirmed, with a good army, which he was then ready to diſband, and therefore retired as the *Spaniards* advanced; but the two Generals ſeeing ſo numerous a body of forces, thought proper to attack them, and at firſt gained conſiderable advantage; for *Quiſquis* had not the leaſt ſuſpicion, that they intended to come to an engagement. However, he ſecured a re-

treat to ſome neighbouring rocks, the ſteep acceſſes of which he defended with undaunted courage, and rolled down huge ſtones with ſuch ſucceſs as to kill ſeveral of the aſſailants, and particularly the horſe. In this manner he defended himſelf till night, when he retired to the hills, but his rear being the next day attacked on the banks of a river, maintained a very difficult paſs for many hours, and ſecured a ſafe retreat into the mountains, whence in a few days he made a ſally, with pretty good ſucceſs, for though he had a conſiderable loſs, his hopes were kept alive by his having killed above 50 *Spaniards*.

Pizarro being informed of theſe tranſactions, reſolved to prevent *Alverado*'s viſit, for he was a little doubtful whether the ſight of *Cuzco*, and the rich country about it, might not revive *Alverado*'s ambition. On his arrival at *Caxamalca* he had an interview with the *Indian* chiefs, in which he informed them of the treaty concluded with the Inca *Manco Capac* and himſelf, and put an end to theſe feuds, by aſſuring them, that his countrymen had been entirely ignorant of it, promiſing that from thence forward all hoſtilities ſhould ceaſe. He afterwards met *Alverado* in the valley of *Pacha Camac*, embraced him with the appearance of great affection, and not only agreed to perform the articles ſtipulated by *Almagro*, but made him a preſent of 20,000 peſoes of gold more, for the expence of his journey in coming to meet him, beſides a great number of emeralds, turquoiſes, and veſſels of gold curiouſly wrought for his own private uſe, and ordered all his officers,

during his ſtay, to look upon him as their commander.

Alverado, after he had ſufficiently reſted and refreſhed himſelf, took his leave of the two Generals, highly ſatisfied both with the treatment he had met with, and the treaſures he had acquired. *Almagro* then went back to *Cuzco*, while *Pizarro* ſtaid behind to ſearch for a proper place for founding a new city, which he at length built on the ſea coaſt on the banks of the little river *Lima* in 12° 30′. ſouth latitude, 120 miles weſt of *Cuzco*. The firſt ſtone was laid on the 6th of *January* 1534, and from its being the feaſt of *Epiphany*, he called the town *Villa de los Reyes*, or the City of Kings. This place is now the capital of *Peru*, and is known by the name of *Lima*. *Pizarro* having ſettled ſome of his people here, divided the neighbouring lands among them, and aſſigned a number of *Indians* to perform their drudgery, which they juſtly conſidered as a very great hardſhip. He then proceeded along the coaſt of the *South Sea* to a place about 300 miles farther north, where he founded another city, which, from the place of his birth, he called *Truxillo*.

While *Francis Pizarro* was employed in building this laſt city, he received advice, that his brother *Ferdinand* had in a great meaſure ſucceeded in his negotiation at the court of *Spain*, having procured for him the title of Marquis *de los Atabillos*, with the revenues of that province, and a large increaſe of territory, which was to be diſtinguiſhed by the name of *New Caſtile*; that he had alſo obtained for *Almagro*

the poſt of Marſhal of *Peru*, and a government 200 leagues in extent to the ſouthward of the country aſſigned to the Marquis *Pizarro*; but that as to his demand of the vaſſalage of 20,000 *Indians*, the Emperor refuſed to grant it him, till he was informed of the cuſtoms of the country, and what conſequences might proceed from it, when he would ſhew him all the favour in that particular that was conſiſtent with juſtice.

Some account of theſe affairs reaching *Almagro*, before any authentic advices had arrived, he laid aſide the title of *Pizarro*'s Lieutenant, and aſſumed that of Governor of *Cuzco*, under the pretence of its being out of *Pizarro*'s juriſdiction, which he maintained, extended only 200 leagues from the line, wherein being oppoſed by *Pizarro*'s brothers, *Juan* and *Gonzalo*, the diſpute roſe to ſuch a height, that ſome ſkirmiſhes enſued, in which ſeveral lives were loſt. *Pizarro* ſoon heard the news of theſe diſſenſions, while he was at *Truxillo*, when ſeeing the neceſſity of his preſence, he left all his *Spaniſh* followers to proceed with the ſettlement of his new colony, and committed himſelf, without any attendants, to the care of the *Indians*, who carried him in a hammock on their ſhoulders, and relieving one another at proper ſtages, travelled with ſuch expedition, that he reached *Cuzco* before there was the leaſt ſuſpicion of his approach. He then ſoon convinced *Almagro* of his error, told him that if on the arrival of their commiſſions from *Spain*, he ſhould diſlike what was allotted to him, he would divide with him the government of *Peru*, and at the ſame time let him know, that though the

territory to the ſouthward of *Cuzco* called *Chili*, was by all accounts richer in gold and ſilver, he would conſent to his marching at the head of the beſt part of their united forces to diſcover and obtain the poſſeſſion of it.

As the aſſiſtance of the *Peruvians* was ſtill neceſſary to the *Spaniards*, they endeavoured to keep fair with them, yet at the ſame time awed them with troops in different places; they ſtrengthened *Balancazar* at *Quito*, and a large body marched to the north-eaſt to reduce ſome provinces bordering on the immenſe ridge of mountains called the *Andes*, and thus ſhewed, that they were very far from intending to perform the agreement they had made with the *Peruvians*.

CHAP. V.

Almagro *ſets out with a powerful Army of* Spaniards *and* Peruvians *to conquer* Chili; *but loſes many of his Men, and ſuffers dreadful Hardſhips in paſſing the* Cordilleras. *He abandons* Chili *in order to take upon himſelf the Government of* Cuzco, *which is attacked by the* Indians. *The Inca diſbands his Forces and retires to the Mountains; while the City of* Cuzco *is ſurprized by* Almagro, *who gains ſeveral Advantages over* Pizarro, *but afterwards concludes a Treaty with him, which being broken by* Pizarro, *a bloody Battle is fought, in which* Almagro *is taken Priſoner, and afterwards tried, condemned and executed.*

ALMAGRO having reſolved upon his ſouthern expedition, the Inca *Manco*, in hopes of obliging the *Spaniards*, aſſiſted him with

15,000 men, under the conduct of his brother *Paullu*, and *Villachuma*, or as he is called by the *Spaniſh* hiſtorians *Villahoma*. With this body of men, *Almagro* began his march in the year 1535, and proceeded ſouthwards as far as the province of *Charcas*, which he ſlighted as not worth keeping, on account of its being a barren and inhoſpitable country.* In this province *Almagro* was informed of two paſſages into *Chili*, both of them attended with extraordinary difficulty, the one being through a hot ſandy deſart, where his people muſt be prepared to encounter the ſevereſt attacks of heat and thirſt; the other lying over prodigious mountains covered with ſnow, ſo craggy and ſteep as ſcarce to admit of being climbed, and ſo intenſely cold as to be impaſſable, except at one ſeaſon of the year.

Almagro conſidering that the latter was the ſhorter road, and that cold, however ſharp, was more ſupportable to *European* conſtitutions than exceſſive heat, choſe that paſſage, and perſiſted in his reſolution, in ſpite of the repreſentations of *Paullu* and the *Indians*: but he had ſoon reaſon to repent of his obſtinacy: for his men being obliged to remove the ſnow with their hands, made ſhort journies, ſoon conſumed their proviſions, and were reduced to inconceivable diſtreſſes, ſo that he loſt above 10,000 *Peruvians* and 150 *Spaniards*, excluſive of ſuch as eſcaped with the loſs of their fingers and toes, though

* *Charcas* has, however ſince proved the moſt valuable of all the *Spaniſh* acquiſitions, as it contains the rich mountains of *Potoſi*, from whence more ſilver has been brought into *Europe*, than from any other mines hitherto diſcovered

the *Spaniards* were very warmly clothed. They alſo loſt all or the greateſt part of their baggage. However, they, at length, after a tedious march of 600 miles, arrived in *Capayapu*, ſubject to the Inca of *Peru*, where through *Paullu*'s influence they were chearfully entertained, and the inhabitants not only brought them plenty of proviſions, but being informed of their love of gold, made them preſents to the amount of 5000 ducats.

Almagro found *Paullu*'s authority of great ſervice to him in his progreſs, for on his account he was received in many places with much cordiality, and oppoſed only in few, ſo that he might eaſily have eſtabliſhed colonies in very advantageous ſituations, had not a kind of infatuation directed all his views towards *Cuzco*, where, notwithſtanding the late treaty he was reſolved to rule, affirming, from the commiſſion which he had now received from the King of *Spain*, that this city fell within his juriſdiction. This commiſſion was brought him by *Ruis Diaz* and *Juan de Harada*, who joined him with recruits from *Cuzco*, after having paſſed the *Cordilleras*, the road *Almagro* himſelf had taken, and which, as it was then ſummer, he paſſed with very little fatigue.

Notwithſtanding *Almagro*'s receiving theſe recruits, he abandoned all his views upon *Chili*, and began his march northward, when his army being terrified at the remembrance of the diſtreſſes they had endured in paſſing the *Cordilleras*, abſolutely refuſed to return by the ſame road they came. Upon which he was obliged to take his rout through the deſart,

where he was told by the *Indians*, that there was no water, but what was to be met with in ſtanding pools, corrupted by the heat of the ſun, and even theſe at eighteen or twenty miles diſtance from each other. To remedy theſe inconveniences, leathern bottles were made to carry the water, and parties of *Indians* diſpatched before the army to drain the pits of that which was ſtagnated, and leave the freſh at liberty to riſe: expedients that were of vaſt uſe, and that enabled them to paſs theſe barren tracts with much leſs difficulty than was at firſt imagined.

In the mean while the *Peruvians* who marched with *Almagro*, grew diſcontented at the ill uſage they met with from the *Spaniards*, and complained to each other of their barbarity. None had a greater ſhare of theſe conferences than the interpreter ſo often mentioned, who at length engaged in a plot againſt *Almagro*'s life; but reflecting on the danger to which he was expoſed, endeavoured to ſecure himſelf by flight. He was however taken, and then informed againſt the Inca *Paullu* as being the principal perſon in the plot; but this being inconſiſtent with that Prince's general behaviour, *Almagro* cauſed the interpreter to be put to the torture, when he confeſſed the falſhood of his accuſation, and at the ſame time acknowledged, that by falſe ſuggeſtions he had contributed to take away the life of *Atahalibat*. On which accounts he ſuffered an ignominious death.

At this time affairs were in great confuſion in *Peru*; the Inca *Manco* had now loſt all confidence in the *Spaniards*, and was ſo ſenſible of

the injuries he received, and of the little hopes there were of his ever being reſtored to the poſſeſſion of his throne and the ſovereign power, as had been promiſed by the treaty of *Caxamalca*, that he reſolved to try what could be done by force; judging it better to rely upon the juſtice of his cauſe, and the aſſiſtance of his people, than upon the promiſes of thoſe who had ſo baſely broke their words to his brother, and had never fulfilled their engagements to himſelf. For this purpoſe he prevailed on *Ferdinand Pizarro* to give him leave to go to a ſolemn feſtival held at *Yucaya*, four leagues from *Cuzco*, which was in reality a kind of aſſembly of the ſtates of *Peru*, where a ſcheme was laid of inſtantly raiſing three armies, and inveſting *Cuzco*, *Lima*, and *Truxillo* at the ſame time. With the firſt he himſelf took the caſtle of *Cuzco*, and cloſely blocked up the city; the ſecond, which conſiſted of a good body of troops, marched againſt *Francis Pizarro*, at the city of *Lima*, and the third was intended to act againſt *Almagro*, notice of which was ſent to the high prieſt, who found means to eſcape from the army. Prince *Paullu* was alſo informed of the ſituation of his brother's affairs, and what was expected from him, in order to facilitate the conqueſt of the invaders, but he rejected theſe propoſals, and declared that he would never break his faith with the *Spaniards*. The interpreter having diſcloſed this ſecret with his laſt breath, *Almagro* declared *Paullu* Emperor, and though he had before refuſed that title, yet he now ſuffered it to be given him,

him, for the ſake of his own ſafety, and that his nation might not want a protector.

The Inca *Manco* ſtill continued to beſiege *Cuzco* with an army of 200,000 men; but though there were only 70 *Spaniards* in the place, yet having ſome horſe, and a good train of artillery, they made a vigorous defence, and what is ſtill more ſurprizing, made ſeveral ſallies, in one of which *Juan Pizarro* being wounded in the head with a ſtone, died about three days after to the great regret of thoſe of his party.

The Inca, hearing of *Almagro*'s approaching *Cuzco*, reſolved to retire, and though *Almagro* endeavoured to perſuade him to agree to a treaty, he abſolutely refuſed it, being determined never more to hear of terms from a people who had hitherto kept none with him: but took a very ſurprizing ſtep, which was diſbanding his army, and privately retiring to the mountains. His officers endeavoured to diſſuade him from it, by obſerving, that no time could ever promiſe him greater ſucceſs than this, in which *Pizarro* and *Almagro* were at open variance. In anſwer to which he replied, that notwithſtanding their private animoſities, they would certainly join againſt him, ſhould he make a ſhew of oppoſing them, and that it was time enough for him to return and vindicate his right, when they were thoroughly weakened by their mutual contentions.

It is ſurprizing that the *Spaniards* ſhould have choſen this time for quarrelling among themſelves, and entering into a civil war. But *Almagro* having a conſiderable body of troops under

nder his command, reſolved immediately to enew his old claim to *Cuzco*, and in caſe he ould make himſelf maſter of that city, de-rmined to render it the ſeat of his govern-ent. On his appearing before the walls, and nding the *Indians* drawn off, he ſent a ſum-ons to Don *Ferdinand Pizarro* the *Spaniſh* overnor, to deliver up the city, to which he nſwered, that he held it by commiſſion from is brother the Marquis, and would not deli-r it up without his orders, as he knew it to e within the limits of his brother's govern-ent. He immediately proceeded to put the lace in a poſture of defence; but part of the arriſon being *Almagro*'s friends, introduced is forces into the town at midnight, when *erdinand* and *Gonzalo Pizarro* were made pri-oners, by which means *Almagro* became poſſeſ-d of *Cuzco* with little or no bloodſhed, and moſt f the garriſon entered into his pay.

In the mean time the Marquis *Pizarro* hear-ng no news from his brother at *Cuzco*, and con-luding that all the parties he had ſent thither reinforce them had been cut off by the *Peru-ians*, reſolved to ſend ſuch a body of troops ither as ſhould be able to force their way in pite of all the oppoſition the *Indians* could make gainſt them, and having aſſembled 5000 horſe nd foot, gave the command of this body to on *Alonzo de Alvarado*, with orders to march ith all poſſible expedition, and under him ppointed *Pedro de Lerma* Captain of a troop f horſe, who being an older officer, was ſo diſguſted,

diſguſted at this affront, that he meditated the ruin of the enterprize.

Alverado marched with ſuch diſpatch, that tho' he had preſſed upwards of 5000 *Peruvians* to carry his baggage, moſt of them periſhed in the firſt part of the journey, by being overloaden, and driven beyond their ſtrength, upon which he halted, and preſſed ſome thouſands more to ſupply the places of thoſe he had loſt.

Almagro having received intelligence that Don *Alonzo Alverado* was advancing, diſpatched ſome *Spaniards* of diſtinction to repreſent to him that *Cuzco*, according to the Emperor's diviſion of *Peru*, was a part of his government, and to adviſe him to return back to *Lima*, till the Marquis and he ſhould adjuſt the limits of their reſpective government, when *Alverado*, inſtead of complying with this requeſt, made theſe gentlemen priſoners. Upon this *Almagro* took the field, and ſurprized a party of *Alverado*'s horſe, by whom he was informed that great part of the troops were better affected to him then to the Marquis *Pizarro*, and that *Pedro de Lerma* with many of his friends, would deſert upon the firſt opportunity, he therefore advanced to the banks of a ſmall river, on the other ſide of which *Alverado* was encamped; they remained quiet however without endeavouring to attack each other all day; but in the night *Orgonez*, *Almagro*'s Lieutenant General, forded the river at the head of the troops, threw *Alverado*'s forces into great confuſion, and giving *Pedro de Lerma*, with the reſt of *Almagro*'s friends, an opportunity of joining him, gained

gained an eaſy victory, and took *Alverado* priſoner, with whom he returned in triumph to *Cuzco*. Some of the principal commanders now adviſed the conqueror to provide for his future ſecurity, by putting the *Pizarros* to death: but this he abſolutely refuſed, alledging, that it was beneath a gentleman and ſoldier to put people to death in cold blood; and, though he was preſſed with great warmth to march with his victorious army againſt *Lima*, he would not agree to it, on account of his having no claim to that part of the country.

The Marquis of *Pizarro* was greatly affected at the news of this defeat, and finding himſelf too weak to make head againſt *Almagro*, as his whole force ſcarcely exceeded 400 men, he reſolved to try what could be done by policy, and therefore ſent deputies to *Cuzco*, to propoſe an accommodation. *Almagro* received them with great civility, and promiſed to have an interview with the Marquis, in which commiſſioners ſhould be choſen to ſettle their reſpective boundaries. He accordingly marched out of *Cuzco* at the head of above five hundred *Spaniards*, and took the road to *Lima*, carrying *Ferdinand Pizarro* with him as his priſoner, while *Gonzalo Pizarro* and *Alverado* were left in the city under the care of *De Rojas*, but after *Almagro*'s departure they ſeized *De Rojas*, put him in irons, and made their eſcape to *Lima*, accompanied by about 60 men, whom they had won over to their intereſt. Upon receiving the news of their eſcape, *Orgonez* and his partizans urged *Almagro* to revenge it by the

death of his priſoner *Ferdinand*; but this he abſolutely refuſed, and ſoon after met the Marquis at *Mala*, with twelve perſons on each ſide, in order to terminate their diſputes. This conference was, however, ſuddenly broke off by one of *Almagro*'s followers ruſhing abruptly into his preſence, and crying out that he was betrayed, whereupon he inſtantly took horſe and rode off, leaving matters entirely unſettled.

This alarm was cauſed by the approach of *Gonzalo* with 700 men. Upon which *Orgonez* alſo advanced with his troops in order to prevent the treachery he ſuſpected to be in agitation. Each ſide now ſeemed ready for war, and yet the Marquis again found means to perſuade *Almagro*, to liſten to terms, and a treaty was concluded and ſworn to by each of them, by which the poſſeſſion of *Cuzco*, with other advantages, was ceded to *Almagro*, till the Emperor's deciſion ſhould be known. In conſequence of this treaty *Ferdinand Pizarro* was ſet at liberty upon his taking an oath not to act againſt *Almagro*.

The Marquis *Pizarro* had no ſooner obtained his brother's liberty, than he broke through the treaty, ſending a notary with witneſſes to ſummon *Almagro* to ſurrender *Cuzco* and all the places he had conquered, on pain of being treated as a rebel: a method of proceeding that was the more inexcuſeable, as he had juſt before received an expreſs from court, by which each Governor was enjoined, under pain of the Emperor's diſpleaſure, to keep quiet poſſeſſion of all ſuch places, as ſhould own their reſpective juriſdiction at the time of the meſſenger's arrival.

arrival, and in caſe they thought themſelves injured, they were directed to appeal to the council of the *Indies*. But theſe orders he thought fit to ſuppreſs.

Almagro, ſeeing how ungenerouſly he was treated, gave orders for defending *Cuzco*, and marched with his troops to meet the Marquis's army which was advancing under the command of *Gonzalo Pizarro*; the two armies met near a place called the *Salinas*, ſo named from a fountain of brackiſh water which ſprung up there; but after an engagement which laſted two hours, *Almagro* was entirely defeated. *Orgonez* behaved with great gallantry; but growing faint with his wounds, accepted quarter from a perſon named *Fuentez*, who thus getting him into his power, murdered him in cold blood. *Ferdinand Pizarro* was in the heat of the engagement unhorſed by *Lerma*, who at the ſame time upbraided him with his perjury; his armour however ſaved his life. *Lerma* was afterwards borne down by ſome of *Pizarro*'s party, and was treacherouſly ſtabbed; but had the misfortune to recover, and to be more cruelly butchered, and at length *Almagro*, who was ill and too weak to ſit a horſe, was carried into the field in a litter, and preceiving his army defeated, retired to the citadel of *Cuzco*, whither he was followed by *Alverado*, to whom he was ſoon obliged to ſurrender.

Almagro was no ſooner in the power of his enemies, than *Ferdinand* reſolved to be revenged for his own and his brother's long impriſonment; therefore, after *Almagro* had been

ſome months confined in priſon at *Cuzco*, the lawyers were employed to draw up articles againſt him, the principal of which were, that he had ſeized the city of *Cuzco*, entered into a ſacred treaty with the Inca, encroached upon the government granted to the Marquis, and fought two battles againſt the forces of his Sovereign, by which much *Chriſtian* blood had been ſpilt, and the progreſs of the *Spaniſh* arms greatly retarded.

For theſe offences *Almagro* being tried by his enemies, was convicted and condemned to die, though he appealed to the Emperor, and in very moving terms applied to *Ferdinand Pizarro* to ſave his life. He obſerved that he had ſpared him, and, on account of the friendſhip he bore him and the Marquis, had refuſed to put to death any of his relations; that he would do well to remember how inſtrumental he had been in enabling his brother to obtain thoſe conqueſts, and raiſing him to the honours he poſſeſſed; he deſired the *Pizarros* would conſider, that he was an old gouty man who could not live many years, and that they would therefore ſuffer him, after the innumerable hardſhips he had ſuſtained, to die a natural death. *Alverado* alſo pleaded ſtrongly, that his appeal to the Emperor might be admitted, and attempted, though in vain, to ſoften *Ferdinand*'s inflexibility, by repreſenting the kindneſs with which he had treated both him and his brother when they were his priſoners, and their lives in his power. But looking upon their old companion and fellow-ſoldier as the only obſtacle to their ambition

and believing that by his death they ſhould obtain the ſole dominion of *Peru* without a rival, they were deaf to all his intreaties, and having cauſed him to be privately ſtrangled in priſon, they ordered his head to be cut off on a ſcaffold in the great ſquare of *Cuzco*. His body lay moſt part of the day almoſt naked, expoſed on the ſcaffold, without any body daring to bury it, leſt this ſhould provoke his enemies, who were ſo inhumane as to take no care of its interment. But towards evening a few poor *Peruvians*, who had been his ſervants, wrapt it in a coarſe ſheet, and conveyed it to a church, erected by the *Spaniards*, where it was interred by the clergy under the high altar,

Thus died *Almagro*, in the 75th, or, as others ſay, the 65th year of his age. He was of a low ſtature, but ſtrong and well ſet. His enemies ſaid he was of mean parentage, but this it was impoſſible for them to know, ſince as has been already obſerved, he was found in the ſtreets, and, being never owned by any body, went by the name of the town in which he was found. His education was of a piece with his birth, for it is uncertain what it was, or where he received it. He became a ſoldier almoſt as ſoon as he became a man. He was remarkable for his bravery, and had ſuch preſence of mind that no danger could diſconcert him. He was kind, liberal, and ſlow in puniſhing his ſoldiers; yet, from the force of his own example, maintained a very ſtrict diſcipline. Though he kept a good table for his officers, he himſelf fared as hard as any private man in the army,

and when this was repreſented to him as a piece of affectation, he replied, that his was the die of a ſoldier. He was loyal to his Prince, and merciful to the *Spaniards*; but was at the ſame time haughty and ambitious, and at firſt very cruel to the *Peruvians*; but living ſome time with a *Peruvian* woman, by whom he had his ſon *Diego*, he at length grew ſo kind to them that they loved him better than any of the *Spaniards*.

The natural ſon which *Almagro* had by the above *Indian* woman, he at his death bequeathed to the care of *Diego Alvarado*, who deſiring *Pizarro* to evacuate ſo much of the country as he had always allowed to be under *Almagro*'s government, that he might take poſſeſſion of it for the youth, was haughtily anſwered, that his government was now unbounded, and ſince *Almagro* was no more, he knew of nobody who had a right to inſiſt on ſharing it with him.

Alvarado exaſperated at his anſwer, reſolved to ſeek redreſs at the court of *Spain*; he therefore ſoon after left *Peru*, and returned to *Europe* with ſuch evidences, as were proper to ſupport the cauſe he eſpouſed.

The death of *Almagro*, tho' covered with a ſhew of juſtice, was ſo highly reſented by the *Spaniards*, that inſtead of extinguiſhing, as was expected, it increaſed his faction. Upon which *Ferdinand Pizarro*, ſuſpecting from the behaviour of the ſoldiers, that ſome deſigns were carrying on againſt his life, thought proper to

follow

follow *Alverado* to *Spain*, with all the gold he could collect, in order to bribe the *Spaniſh* miniſtry. But *Alverado* having prepared the way for his reception, he was arreſted, and thrown into priſon as ſoon as he arrived, and though *Alverado* died ſoon after, he was ſuſpected to have been poiſoned by *Ferdinand*, to put a ſtop to the proſecution, yet the latter continued 23 years in confinement.

The *Peruvians* now obſerving the diviſion which ſubſiſted among the *Spaniſh* Generals, had again recourſe to arms, and though the *Spaniards* in *Peru* ſoon amounted to above 2000, they found it more difficult to maintain their ground than at firſt, when they had not 400; for the terror the *Peruvians* were under from the fire-arms and horſes, which they had never ſeen before, was in a great meaſure worn off; ſome of them even learned of the *Spaniards* how to ride, and handle their arms, and, having taken ſome horſes, were not afraid to make uſe of them againſt theſe tyrants; and it ſeems highly probable, that, had not ſome particular bodies of *Indians* been ſo infatuated as to adhere cloſely to the intereſts of the *Spaniards*, diſcovered the ſtrong paſſes, and, from time to time, brought them both proviſions and intelligence, *Pizarro* would at laſt have been obliged to abandon his conqueſts.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

The Marquis Pizarro *extends his Conqueſts to the South, and ſubdues the Province of* Charcas, *after which he ſends his Brother* Gonzalo, *whom he had made Governor of* Quito, *to make new Diſcoveries, who proceeds to the Eaſtward, in hopes of finding Countries ſtill richer than* Peru: *but is at length deſerted by* Orellana, *who ſails down the River of the* Amazons, *and from thence returns to the* Spaniſh *Settlements on the other ſide of the Continent of* America, *which obliges* Gonzalo *to return to* Quito.

THE moſt conſiderable acquiſition made after *Almagro*'s death, was the conqueſt of the province of *Charcas*, in which were the invaluable mines of *Potoſi*, whoſe treaſures attracted ſuch a multitude of adventurers, that the *Peruvians* were at length compelled to ſubmit, and become ſlaves to their imperious maſters. But the *Spaniards* were far from being ſo ſucceſsful in *Chili*; that brave people diſputed the ground with them by inches, nor could they ever intirely conquer it; even in the province of *Charcas*, *Gonzalo Pizarro*, and his forces, were ſo ſurrounded and diſtreſſed by the *Indians*, that his brother the Marquis was obliged to march in perſon to his relief, with the garriſon of *Cuzco*.

However, this conqueſt being finiſhed, the Marquis founded the town of *La Plata*, ſo named

med from the ſilver mines, and divided not only the city, and the country about it, but the *Indian* inhabitants, among the conquerors. To his brother *Ferdinand Pizarro*, who was then confined in *Spain*, he allotted a large ſhare, and to his brother *Gonzalo*, that part of the country in which were the ſilver mines of *Potoſi*. *Ferdinand*, as a citizen of *La Plata*, had alſo a ſhare in theſe mines, and a particular part of the country being aſſigned to his officers, they diſcovered ſo rich a vein, that they are ſaid to have dug from it the fineſt ſilver without any alloy.

The Marquis now found himſelf poſſeſſed of an extent of country 7 or 800 leagues in length, from the equinoctial to the ſouth part of the province of *Charcas*, in which were more rich mines than in all the world beſides, and yet his avarice or ambition was not fully ſatisfied; but, in an extreme old age, he employed his brother *Gonzalo*, who was then Governor of *Quito*, in the conqueſt of other nations.

Gonzalo accordingly entered the province of *Los Quitos*, and, after ſubduing that country, where the people were downright barbarians, when compared with thoſe of *Peru*, he reſolved to paſs the high mountains which bound that province on the north, and, for that purpoſe, aſſembled a conſiderable number of *Indians*, and a good quantity of cattle; but having aſcended half way, the cold was ſo intenſe, that he perceived it would be impoſſible for him to proſecute his march in that manner. Therefore, leaving his cattle, and the beſt part of his baggage, he haſtily deſcended into the valley of *Zumaque*,

Zumaque, which he found extremely fertile, and there refreſhed his forces for two months.

Gonzalo then endeavoured to continue his march northward; but, finding the way extremely rough and mountainous, he turned directly eaſt, in hopes of meeting with an eaſier paſſage, and entered into a rich and populous country, where the inhabitants were filled with amazement and terror at ſeeing the *Spaniards* among them, and indeed they had the greateſt reaſon; for theſe pretended *Chriſtians* behaved towards them with the moſt ſavage brutality, for *Gonzalo Pizarro* himſelf is ſaid, even by ſome *Spaniſh* writers, to have given ſeveral of the natives to be eaten alive by his dogs.

This inhuman treatment made them riſe in arms againſt theſe invaders, which obliged him to encamp, and uſe all the precautions neceſſary in an enemy's country. But, having fixed their tents on the bank of a river, it ſwelled ſo much in one night, that, if the centinels had not in time warned them of their danger, they had all been drowned; but the alarm was no ſooner given, than they ſecured themſelves, by running up towards the cottages of the *Indians*.

Pizarro, diſappointed at this event, and not knowing what other courſe to take, returned to *Zumaque*, and from thence proceeded, with all his men, towards a large village called *Ampua*, where he found the Cacique, and a great number of the inhabitants, in a poſture of defence; but there was another and greater obſtacle in his way, and that was a river ſo wide and deep, that he had no poſſible means of croſſing it.

The

The only expedient he had left, was, therefore, to enter into a treaty with the people of the country, and to desire the assistance of their canoes. This proposal the Cacique received with great civility, agreed to terms of peace, and granted them as many canoes as they desired, on which *Gonzalo*, in return, made him a present of many little *Spanish* toys. The Cacique, however, receiving advice of the ill treatment his neighbours had received from his new guests, endeavoured to make them believe, that great riches were to be found among the people who dwelt some days journey lower down the river. *Pizarro* returned him thanks by his guides, who were his interpreters; but, afterwards, finding no appearance of these pretended riches, he returned to *Zumaque*, much dissatisfied with his expedition; but resolved not to return to *Quito*, till he had made some discovery that would render him as famous as his elder brother, the Marquis *Pizarro*.

This resolution *Gonzalo* communicated to *Francis Orellana*, a gentleman of *Truxillo*, who came to join him in the valley of *Zumaque*, and, having taken 100 soldiers, and some *Indians* for guides, and to carry provisions, he marched directly to the east; but these guides soon brought him into a country, full of mountains, forests, and torrents, which obliged him to make ways where he found none, and to open a passage through the woods with hatchets. However, after many days march, he pierced through, as far as the province of *Coca*, where the Cacique came

came to meet him, and offered him all the accommodations the country afforded.

Gonzalo was highly pleaſed with this reception, and, by the aſſiſtance of his guides, entered into a converſation with the Cacique, who let him know, that the country, through which he had paſſed, was ſo full of mountains, foreſts, and rivers, that he had taken the only paſſage that could have brought him thither; but that, if he was willing to embark on the river he ſaw before him, or to follow it by land, he might aſſure himſelf, that he ſhould reach the banks of another river, much larger than this, where there was a plentiful country, whoſe inhabitants were covered with plates of gold.

The Cacique could not have mentioned a more alluring motive, *Gonzalo*'s avarice was fired, and he immediately ſent two of his guides, with orders to the officers and ſoldiers he had left at *Zumaque*, to come and join him immediately. Theſe orders they inſtantly obeyed, and, ſurmounting all the difficulties of the way, arrived, much fatigued, at the town of *Coca*, where *Gonzalo* having made them ſtay ſome days, to refreſh themſelves, placed them in order of battle before the Cacique, who was ſo terrified at their appearance, that he collected a great quantity of proviſions, and preſented them to *Pizarro*, in order to haſten his departure. The latter, impatient to be gone, the next morning filed off his troops along the river, where, having made the Cacique a preſent of a ſword, he placed himſelf at the head of his cavalry, and proceeded along the banks, which were extremely pleaſant.

However

However, the ſmoothneſs of the way did not laſt long. It was ſoon interrupted by ſmall rivers and uneven grounds, and they were obliged to march 43 days without finding either provifions, fords, or canoes to enable them to paſs the river. By this long march they were much fatigued, when they were ſtopped by a ſight which appeared very ſurprizing; the river grew narrow and confined between two rocks at no more than 20 feet diſtance from each other, and the water ruſhing with rapidity through this ſtrait, precipitated itſelf into a valley, which lay 200 fathoms below.

Here *Pizarro* made that famous bridge for his troops to paſs over, which is ſo much extolled by the *Spaniſh* hiſtorians; but finding the way not at all the better on the other ſide, and their proviſions growing daily more and more ſcarce, *Pizarro* reſolved to cauſe a brigantine to be built, in order to carry by water all his ſick men, proviſions, baggage and gold; and this being done with no ſmall difficulty, *Pizarro* ſent on board this veſſel whatever had obſtructed his march, with 50 ſoldiers under the command of *Francis Orellana*, who were ſtrictly ordered to keep up with them, and to come every night to the camp. This order he obſerved very exactly, till *Gonzalo* ſeeing all his men pinched with hunger, commanded him to go in ſearch of proviſions and cottages, where the *Spaniards* might meet with refreſhments.

No ſooner had *Orellana* received his orders, than he launched out into the middle of the river, where the rapidity of the ſtream carried

him, as faſt as he could wiſh, for in three days he made above 100 leagues without the uſe of either ſails or oars. The current of the river *Coca*, at length carried him into a much larger river where the ſtream was not near ſo ſwift. He there ſtaid a whole day to make his obſervations, and perceiving that the farther he went down, the more the river widened, he had not the leaſt doubt, that this was the great river that had been ſo often ſought for, which filled him with ſuch joy at his good fortune, that without paying the leaſt regard to his duty, fidelity, and gratitude to *Gonzalo Pizarro*, he thought of nothing but executing an enterprize he was then forming. For this purpoſe he perſuaded his companions that this country was not that deſcribed by their General; that it had not the plenty the Cacique told him he ſhould find at the joining of the two rivers, and that they muſt proceed farther in ſearch of that pleaſant and fertile land, where they were to ſtore themſelves with proviſions; and beſides that they ſaw there was no poſſibility of returning up the river, for though they had now proceeded only three days, yet he believed they could not make their way back in the ſpace of a year; that it was much more reaſonable for them to wait till *Gonzalo* came up with them: and that it was neceſſary they ſhould ſtill proceed in ſearch of proviſions.

Thus concealing his deſign, he hoiſted ſail and thought of nothing but purſuing the courſe of the river, till he ſhould diſcover it quite to the ſea. Mean while his companions were amaze

at the manner in which he put in execution the deſign he had been propoſing to them, and thought themſelves obliged to tell him, that he went beyond the orders of his General; that conſidering the extreme want he was in, they ought to carry him the little proviſions he could find, and that he had given ſufficient evidence of his having entertained ſome ill deſign, by his neglecting to leave two canoes at the joining of the two rivers, as the General had ordered, for his army to paſs over.

Theſe remonſtrances were chiefly made by a Dominican Friar named *Gaſpar de Carvajal*, and a young gentleman of *Ladujos*, called *Ferdinand Sancho de Vargas*, who were ſo reſpected by thoſe on board, that their remonſtrance occaſioned a diviſion in this little veſſel, and from words they were very near coming to blows; but *Orellana* at length by his proteſtations and fair promiſes appeaſed this diſorder. By means of a friend he had on board, he afterwards gained moſt of the ſoldiers that were againſt him, when ſeeing the two heads of the other party left almoſt alone, he cauſed *De Vargas* to be ſet aſhore and left by himſelf without either proviſions or arms, in a diſmal wilderneſs, bounded on one ſide with high mountains, and by the river on the other. He had more prudence than to treat the Friar in the ſame manner; but he let him know, that it was not for him to penetrate any more into the intentions of his commander, unleſs he had a mind to be ſeverely chaſtiſed.

After this he continued his voyage, and the next day being willing to know if he might ſafely depend upon all that were with him, he told them, that he aſpired to a much higher dignity than could be obtained in the ſervice of *Pizarro*: that he owed every thing to himſelf and to his King; and that his fortune having, as it were, led him by the hand, to the greateſt and moſt deſirable diſcovery that ever was made in the *Indies*, namely, the great river whereupon they were ſailing, which coming out of *Peru*, and running from weſt to eaſt, was the fineſt channel in the new world, through which they might paſs from the *South Sea* to the *Atlantic* Ocean; and that he could not, without betraying them all, and without raviſhing from them the fruits of their voyage and induſtry, make others ſhare in a favour which heaven had reſerved for them alone.

By this means *Orellana* brought his men to have a ſhare of that ambition which fired his own breaſt. His neceſſities however, ſometimes forced him to land with his people to obtain proviſions; but as he did not take theſe with that prudence that became him in a ſtrange country, the natives unanimouſly took up arms, and with great boldneſs fell upon the *Spaniards*, who defended themſelves with much courage, and killed many of their antagoniſts with their croſs-bows, when inſpecting their bodies, they found that ſeveral of them were women; it being no uncommon thing in that country for the women to fight by the ſides of their huſbands; but *Orellana* being of a romantic turn, improved this

ſlight

ſlight hint into a formal hiſtory of a great nation of *Amazons* ſettled upon this river: by which fable, he overturned his great deſign of giving it his own name; for from this ſtory it received the name which it ſtill bears, and will always bear, of *The river of the Amazons*.

However, *Orellana*, in the remaining part of his paſſage took care to behave with more prudence and mildneſs to the people he met with, among whom were many gentle and even polite nations, as well as others that were fierce and warlike. In fine, he paſſed down the river to the ſea, and having coaſted about a promontory, now called the *North Cape*, two hundred leagues from the iſland of *Trinidada*, he ſailed directly thither, and there buying a ſhip, returned to *Spain*, where he made ſuch a report of the countries he had ſeen to the Emperor *Charles* V. that he obtained as ample a commiſſion as he could deſire; and, in the year 1549, ſailed with three ſhips for the river of the *Amazons*; but this ſecond expedition was the very reverſe of the firſt, and was unfortunate from the very beginning; for a contagious diſtemper ſpreading among his men, obliged him to quit two of his three ſhips, and afterwards his company was ſo reduced as to ſail in a ſmall bark, with which he propoſed to proſecute his diſcovery; but being wrecked on the coaſt of the *Caraccas*, he there loſt the reſt of his men, and ſoon after died of mere vexation and deſpair in the iſland of St. *Margaret*.

But to return to *Gonzalo*, who, while *Orellana* was engaged in this expedition, was reduced to the

the greateſt diſtreſs; he proceeded ſeveral days along the banks of the river, till at laſt ſeeing, that there were no hopes of *Orellana*'s return, he concluded, that he and his men were loſt, and therefore giving up all expectation of making any farther diſcoveries in that country, proceeded back to his government of *Quito*.

CHAP. VII.

The Marquis Pizarro's *cruelty to* Almagro's *Followers occaſions his being aſſaſſinated.*

AFTER the Marquis *Pizarro* had ſent his brother *Gonzalo* on the above expedition, he employed himſelf ſolely in ſecuring and eſtabliſhing his authority by a method that was at once the moſt cruel and impolitic: he had before diſcharged all the officers whom he ſuſpected to have had any regard for *Almagro*, and conſcious of his own injuſtice, and fearing leſt they ſhould complain againſt him, he prevented their returning home to *Spain*, by which means many of them being reduced to the neceſſity of living upon the alms of their countrymen, he reſolved to deprive them even of this pitiful ſubſiſtence, and for this purpoſe, publiſhed an Edict forbidding any to relieve them; a proceeding that at once rendered them deſperate, and ſeeing no end to their miſeries, but by diſpatching themſelves or the Marquis, they reſolved upon the latter.

The

The braveſt of *Almagro*'s friends, repaired privately by two or three at a time to the city of *Lima*, where they did not want friends who concealed them in their houſes, till their number amounted to above 200. As they were all hardy veterans, and had ſeveral experienced officers among them, they immediately reſolved to ſeize the firſt opportunity of executing their deſign, but ſoon after thought proper to delay it, in hopes that a new Commiſſioner, ſome of whoſe attendants were already arrived, would come from *Spain*, in order to take cognizance of the Marquis's conduct, and that he would do them juſtice, without laying them under the neceſſity of raiſing an inſurrection. But on *Sunday* the 26th of *June*, 1541, *De Rada*, one of the principal conſpirators, being informed that they were diſcovered, and that the Marquis was taking meaſures for having them all put to an ignominious death in leſs than three hours, haſtily communicated this intelligence to ſuch of the conſpirators as he could moſt readily meet with, when finding there was no time to be loſt, they repaired one by one to the number of nineteen, to the houſe of young *Almagro*, which ſtood on one ſide of the great ſquare, whence they boldly marched at noon day with their drawn ſwords through the market-place to the Marquis's palace, crying "Long live the King, but let the "tyrant die!" When, though there were above 1000 people in the ſquare, they neither met with the leaſt oppoſition, nor did *Pizarro* receive the ſmalleſt hint of their riſing, ſo that they found the

the gates of the palace open, which they eaſily entered.

Pizarro was ſitting with two or three people when the firſt news of the diſturbance was brought by one of his pages, and immediately ordered *Francis de Chaves* his Lieutenant General, to ſecure the great door, which he neglected, as he ſuppoſed it to be only ſome trifling tumult, that would be eaſily ſuppreſſed by his preſence, when going down ſtairs and meeting the conſpirators upon the great ſtair-caſe, he demanded the reaſon of that inſolence, which was anſwered by two or three of the conſpirators lodging their daggers in his boſom, and he fell dead at their feet. The Marquis hearing them in the gallery, and not having time to put on his armour, ſeized his ſword and buckler, and for ſome time defended the door of the drawing-room with great bravery, ſupported only by his half brother Don *Francis de Alcantara*, and two of his pages, the reſt of his company and ſervants having fled at the beginning of the inſurrection. At length, one of the conſpirators killed Don *Francis*, when the reſt puſhing forward with freſh vigour, the Marquis retired before them, but at laſt ſunk down fainting with loſs of blood, and was ſoon diſpatched, while his two pages who fought bravely in his defence, wounded ſeveral of the conſpirators, and expired by his ſide.

Thus died Don *Francis Pizarro*, in the 65th year of his age, in the city of *Lima*, the capital of *Peru*, which he had founded ten or eleven years before. His body was by the young

Almagro's

7 AP 53

Pizarro Assassinated.

Almagro's permiſſion, privately interred by his ſervants, no perſon of any figure daring, at this juncture, to attend his funeral, for fear of giving offence to the prevailing party.

The meanneſs of *Pizarro*'s education was publicly known, from his not being able to write his own name, which was always inſerted by his Secretary between two ſtrokes, which he drew with a pen. He was never married, but had ſeveral concubines, ſome of them the daughters and ſiſters of the Incas; however, we don't find that he left any children behind him. Nature had endowed him with ſome good qualities, the moſt remarkable of which was his bravery, but his ambition was boundleſs; he never ſcrupled to ſacrifice his honour to his intereſt; and his cruelty rendered him a diſgrace to human nature. His fate was in ſome meaſure like that of *Almagro* his unfortunate aſſociate; ſince like him he died a violent death, like him was a victim to ambition, and like him went to the grave in obſcurity after a life of ſplendor.

The conſpirators had no ſooner compleated this bloody ſcene, than they returned to the market-place, declaring that the tyrant was dead, and proclaimed the young *Almagro* Governor of *Peru*. For all the friends of *Almagro* had aſſembled while the others were attacking the Marquis in his palace, and ſecuring his guards, prevented his receiving any aſſiſtance. They alſo ſecured all the horſes and arms in the city, and commanded all the inhabitants who refuſed to join them, not to ſtir out of their houſes without leave. They plundered the houſes

houſes of the Marquis, and his principal friends, in which they found an immenſe treaſure; but did not meddle with the furniture of the Marquis's palace, which they left for the uſe of young *Almagro*, whom they had no ſooner proclaimed Governor, than they conducted thither.

CHAP. VIII.

Young Almagro *meets with Oppoſition.* Vaca de Caſtro, *a Perſon of an excellent Character, arrives from* Spain, *with Power to ſettle the Diſputes in* Peru, *and is joined by ſeveral Officers. He comes to a Battle with* Almagro, *whom he defeats, and* Almagro *being afterwards taken Priſoner, is convicted of High-Treaſon, and executed with many of his Adherents.*

LIMA was inſtantly obliged to own the authority of *Almagro*, and the Marquis *Pizarro*'s death was no ſooner publicly known than *Cuzco* and moſt of the principal towns declared for him. But *Alonzo de Alverado*, who was in the ſouthern province of *Chiachapuca*, and *Pedro Holguin*, abſolutely refuſed to acknowledge *Almagro*'s authority. The former, therefore inſtantly aſſembled a body of troops between *Lima* and *Quito*, and at the ſame time *Holguin* with ſeveral other Generals and Officers, raiſed another body of troops, and haſted to *Cuzco*, where they erected the royal ſtandard, and ſent

meſſengers to the Provinces of *Arequipa*, *Los Charcas*, and other places, to encourage a ſpirit of oppoſition to the new government. Upon this ſome who were friends to *Almagro* privately left thoſe places in order to join their friends at *Lima*, but were purſued and brought back.

In the mean while *Holguin* being informed that *Almagro* was marching at the head of 600 men, either to lay ſiege to *Cuzco*, or to give him battle, and being ſenſible, that he was too weak to oppoſe him, reſolved, if poſſible, to accompliſh a junction with *Alverado*, which he performed in the following manner. He ſent a party of horſe to ſurprize ſome of *Almagro*'s people, two of whom he ordered to be hanged, and ſent back the reſt, with orders to tell their leader, that in a day or two he would pay him ſuch a viſit as would make him repent their meeting. Upon which *Almagro* halted to receive him, while he ſeized that opportunity of turning off into another road, by which he quickly came up with *Alverado*, and ſoon after joined *Vaca de Caſtro*, a new Commiſſioner, who at this inſtant arrived from *Spain*, and was not only appointed to enquire into the diſputes ſubſiſting between the Generals, but was authorized in caſe of the Marquis *Pizarro*'s death, to aſſume the poſt of Governor of *Peru*. He had been driven into the bay of *Gorgona* by contrary winds, and reſolved to travel by land to *Lima*, when he was thus reinforced on the road, and by this means became 700 ſtrong.

Vaca de Caſtro was a man of good ſenſe, great knowledge, and uncorruptible integrity. He

was

was bred to the law; but his ſteady adherence to juſtice, and his declining thoſe cauſes that had the ſlighteſt appearance of any illegality, prevented his having the encouragement his virtue deſerved, by which means he was but little known. The Emperor who had received ſome convincing proofs of his virtue, preferred him to this poſt, without adviſing with any of his Miniſters, ſaying, that he would try how probity would thrive in an *Indian* ſoil, ſince it was ſo little cheriſhed at a *Spaniſh* bar, and it is generally allowed, that the *Spaniſh* dominions in *America* never had ſuch a Governor, either before or ſince. Upon this expedition he ventured with little money, and but few followers; but after being thus ſeconded, his ſucceſs was ſurpriſing.

De Caſtro gave *Alverado* and *Holguin* a very agreeable reception, and to prevent all diſputes ariſing from a diviſion of the chief authority between *Pizarro* and *Almagro*, aſſumed the title of Captain General, reſolving, though he had not been bred in the field, to act every where in perſon. Indeed it was impoſſible to behave with a more even conduct. He uſed the ſtricteſt impartiality in deciding every cauſe that came under his inſpection, without paying the leaſt regard to the party's being either a *Spaniard* or an *Indian*. In ſhort, he threatened no body, flattered no body, acted like a Governor, but lived like a private perſon. The people were at firſt aſtoniſhed at his deportment; but in a few weeks he was obeyed with more ſubmiſſion than was ever exacted by a tyrant, meerly becauſe

the people ſaw he meant nothing but their good. *Belancazar* left his government of *Popayan* to compliment him: moſt of thoſe places that were not over awed by *Almagro*, readily ſubmitted to his authority; and *Gonzalo Pizarro* being returned from his expedition to the eaſtward, after his having ſuſtained very great hardſhips, and loſt near two thirds of his men, ſent a deputation to him from *Quito*, to inform him of his ſubmiſſion, and to offer to march with all the men he could raiſe to his aſſiſtance: to which *De Caſtro* replied, that he accepted of his ſubmiſſion; but that the hardſhips he had endured in his late progreſs required ſome reſt, and therefore he would diſpenſe with his preſence, and he was at liberty to apply himſelf to the government of *Quito*.

In the mean time, young *Almagro* was making what head he could againſt the Captain-General. He had great abilities, improved by a proper education, and was of an open, brave, and generous diſpoſition; but was raſh, and ſomewhat cruel; while his youth leſſened his influence, and drove him into many errors. The death of *De Roda*, who was his General, and a man of fidelity and experience, was a very great misfortune; and his afterwards dividing the poſt of General between *Garcia de Alvarado* and *Chriſtopher de Sotalo*, laid the foundation of his ruin: for the latter having condemned a ſoldier to be hanged for theft, was oppoſed by the former, with ſuch warmth, as occaſioned a violent quarrel, and *de Sotalo* was killed on the ſpot. This aſſaſſination was highly re-

reſented by *Almagro*, when *Gartia* fearing that he would ſeek an opportunity of being revenged, reſolved to be beforehand with him, by murdering him at an entertainment he pretended to provide for him. But *Almagro* coming to the knowledge of this cruel deſign, under the pretence of ſickneſs, ſtaid at home. *Garcia*, however, being unwilling to loſe ſo good an opportunity, went to his palace, to perſuade him to come to the feaſt, when *Almagro*, ſeeming at laſt overcome by his perſuaſions, called for his cloak, which was a concerted ſignal, for the appearance of ſix men, who lay in wait, and inſtantly ruſhing in, ſeized *Garcia*, and ſtabbed him in ſeveral places, *Almagro* himſelf drawing his ſword, and running him through the body. This being done, he made *Balſa* his General, and marched rgainſt the new Governor.

De Caſtro had encamped about fifty leagues ſouth-weſt of *Cuzco*, where, being willing to ſpare the effuſion of human blood, he ſtrove to perſuade *Almagro* to lay down his arms; while the latter inſiſted upon enjoying his father's government, till it ſhould be diſpoſed of by the Emperor. Several meſſages paſſed between them; but at length *Almagro* found that *De Caſtro* was endeavouring to ſeduce his people, and a *Spaniard*, diſguiſed like an *Indian*, was diſcovered in his camp, with letters to *Pedro di Candia*, *Almagro*'s Engineer, containing very advantageous offers, to induce him to render the artillery uſeleſs, in caſe the two armies ſhould come to an engagement; at which the young General was ſo incenſed, that he ordered the

ſpy

ſpy to be inſtantly hanged; and though he before ſeemed inclined to agree to terms of accommodation, he now refuſed to liſten to any farther propoſals, except *De Caſtro* would conſent to baniſh *Alvarado*, *Holguin*, and many veterans, who compoſed the chief ſtrength of his army: therefore both parties, loſing all hopes of coming to an agreement, marched forward, in order to engage in the valley of *Chapas*.

De Caſtro's army was compoſed of 700 *Spaniards*, and many *Indians*; while *Almagro*'s amounted to no more than 500 *Spaniards*; but he had the advantage of a riſing ground, where his artillery commanded the whole plain. *Carvajal*, *De Caſtro*'s Serjeant-Major, endeavoured to avoid the effects of this diſpoſition, by approaching the enemy under cover of a little hill; but, on their loſing that ſhelter, they were laid open to the fire of the artillery; which did no manner of execution, on account of their being levelled too high. This being obſerved by *Almagro*, he flew in a rage to his Engineer, and, giving him the name of traitor, ſtruck him through with a ſpear: he then inſtantly alighted, and, throwing himſelf upon one of the cannon, brought it, with the weight of his body, to bear upon the enemy, when, ordering it to be fired, it ſwept down ſeventeen *Spaniards*.

Almagro now ſeemed to bid fair for obtaining a victory, when the heat of youth led him into a blunder that compleated his deſtruction. *De Caſtro* boldly advancing, ſome of *Almagro*'s people preſſed him to lead them forward to meet him, to which he immediately conſented, and

inconſiderately got between the enemy and his own artillery, which rendered it intirely uſeleſs. This being obſerved by *Suarez*, his Serjeant-Major, he told him, that had he kept his poſt, *De Caſtro* would have been inevitably ruined; but as he had thrown away the advantage fortune had given him, he did not chuſe to ſhare in a defeat that roſe from his miſconduct, and immediately rode off, with ſeveral followers, to *De Caſtro*'s army, and ſoon after the latter obtained a complete victory. In this battle, which was fought on the 16th of *September*, 1542, 500 *Spaniards* were ſlain, and the principal perſons in *Almagro*'s army taken priſoners. *Almagro*, who had behaved with great reſolution and courage, eſcaped with only ſix horſemen, intending to have taken refuge in the mountains, till he could obtain a favourable opportunity of recovering his government; but taking *Cuzco* in his way, with a deſign of carrying off his treaſure, and ſuch of his effects as would have been moſt uſeful to him in his exile, the very men, whom *Almagro* had truſted with the government of the city, hearing he had loſt the battle, apprehended him, and delivered him up to *De Caſtro*, in order to make their peace with him; upon which the young *Almagro*, who was not above 20 years of age, was tried, condemned, and executed for high-treaſon, in the ſame place, and much in the ſame manner, as his father had been, and was afterwards privately buried in the ſame grave.

De Caſtro, upon this occaſion, was ſo inexorable, that he did not think the beheading of *Almagro*

Almagro a ſufficient atonement for his rebellion and its conſequences; but cauſed moſt of his principal counſellors, and particularly thoſe who had been concerned in the aſſaſſination of the Marquis *Pizarro*, to be tried and put to death; by which means he not only extinguiſhed the rebellion, but eradicated the very ſeeds of it.

CHAP. IX.

De Caſtro's *wiſe Regulations after the Suppreſſion of the Rebellion. He is ſuperſeded by* Blaſco Nunez, *who has the Title of Viceroy, and puts* De Caſtro *under an arreſt; however, he is oppoſed by* Gonzalo Pizarro, *and impriſoned; but eſcaping, is at length killed in Battle, and* Gonzalo *acknowledged Governor of* Peru.

PEACE being thus reſtored, *De Caſtro* diſbanded the beſt part of his troops, laid aſide all his ſeverity, and applied himſelf to the arts of peace. He eſtabliſhed courts of juſtice, in which cauſes were decided with great impartiality: he erected colleges and ſchools in all the cities and great towns; appointed many learned men to ſtudy the *Peruvian* language, and preach the doctrines of Chriſtianity to the people: he cauſed the old colonies to be better ſettled, and new ones planted: took care to have the old mines improved, and ſuch as were daily diſcovered, to be wrought for the benefit of his maſter, and the lawful proprietors; and,

had the government continued in his hands *Peru* would, in a little time, have been one of the beſt regulated kingdoms upon earth, and more profitable to the crown of *Spain* than all its other dominions. But the cabals of the Miniſtry, who could draw no advantage from a man, whoſe conduct needed no defence, and was above either courting or bribing them, prevailed on the King to erect a kind of royal audience in *Peru*, and to give very great power to the Commiſſioners of which it was compoſed, who, immediately on their arrival, made it their buſineſs to croſs the Governor in every thing. This occaſioned freſh diſturbances, both among the *Spaniards* and *Indians*, and freſh complaints to the court of *Spain*, which were perhaps far from diſpleaſing the Miniſters, because, whenever they came, their intereſt was ſollicited by rich preſents. Theſe diſcontents occaſioned another perſon's being ſent, with the title of Viceroy, to ſuperſede the Governor, and enforce a body of laws made at *Barcelona*, which, though well intended, were by no means proper for *Peru*.

This new Governor, whoſe name was *Blaſco Nunez Vela*, arrived at *Lima* in the year 1544, and, notwithſtanding the inhabitants unanimouſly propoſed to ſupport *De Caſtro* in his adminiſtration, and to petition the Emperor for his continuance, he abſolutely refuſed to take advantage of their friendſhip, and ſubmitted to the authority of *Nunez*, who, being jealous of his influence, ſoon found out a pretence for putting him under an arreſt, and proceeded in ſo arbi-

trary

trary a manner, as to create himſelf many enemies, who encouraged *Gonzalo Pizarro* to raiſe troops againſt him, and promiſed to ſupport him in the poſt of Procurator-general, with a power to enliſt men for his perſonal defence. Even the Judges, ſent by the court of *Spain*, acknowledged his title, in oppoſition to *Nunez*, and took ſuch meaſures, that, in the city of *Cuzco*, he was acknowledged Governor of *Peru*.

The hiſtorians *De la Vega* and *Herrera* repreſent *Nunez*'s adminiſtration in very different lights; but as the former lived in *Peru* at the time when the things happened about which he writes, and appears to have been poſſeſſed of all the coolneſs of an hiſtorian, without vindicating any ill action on either ſide, we ſhall adhere to the account he has given us.

Nunez behaved in ſo haughty and arbitrary a manner, that his forces daily deſerted to *Pizarro*; and, being extremely paſſionate, he ordered *Suarez*, one of his beſt friends, to be aſſaſſinated in his preſence, from the bare ſuſpicion that he deſigned to deſert; but he was ſoon after fully convinced of his fidelity. In a ſhort time this raſh Viceroy was taken into cuſtody by the Judges, who ſent him, under a guard, on board a ſhip, as the only method of preſerving him from the reſentment of the angry populace, and the revenge of *Benito de Carvajal*, brother to *Suarez*, who had ſerved under *Gonzalo*. However, *Nunez* was afterwards ſet at liberty, and, at his own deſire, was conducted to *Truxillo*, by *Alvarez*, one of the Judges.

In the mean while, *Gonzalo Pizarro* got himſelf generally acknowledged Governor of *Peru*;

but

but very prudently referred the adminiſtration of civil affairs to the Judges, and ſolely applied himſelf to the improvement of his army, regulating affairs in ſuch a manner, that nobody appeared willing to diſpute his authority. He reſolved to ſend two of his party to *Spain*, to defend his proceedings, in the ſame ſhip with *De Caſtro*: but the latter, fearing to be ill-treated by theſe two Envoys, prevailed on the crew to quit the harbour, and ſteer for *Panama*, before *Pizarro*'s diſpatches were ready.

Pizarro was ſo extremely incenſed at the wiſe *De Caſtro*'s eſcape, that he accuſed many perſons, who had ſhewed themſelves his friends, of conniving at it, and not only impriſoned them, but had the cruelty to put ſeveral of them to death.

In the mean while *Nunez* and Judge *Alvarez* arrived at *Tumbez*, where they publiſhed a manifeſto, with an account of the particulars of *Pizarro*'s rebellion, deſiring the aſſiſtance of all loyal ſubjects againſt him. While *Nunez* was in theſe circumſtances, he diſcovered much greater abilities than he had before done in his proſperity; but his ill character frighted even *Pizarro*'s enemies from joining him: he was therefore forced to retire on the approach of *Pizarro*, who purſued him to the mountains of *Quito*, where he was frequently reduced to ſuch diſtreſs, as to be obliged to feed on horſe-fleſh. In this manner, *Nunez* avoided him for above a year together, during which many inſtances of cruelty were committed on both ſides; but at length the two armies came to an engage-

ment

ment near *Quito*, on the 19th of *January*, 1546, when *Nunez*'s party was intirely routed, and he himſelf, while fighting with great bravery, was knocked down, his head cut off, and ſet upon a pole. But this *Pizarro* reſented, and was no ſooner informed of it, than he ordered it to be taken down, and interred with the body. He affected to appear grieved at his death, and even went into mourning; but, notwithſtanding this affectation of ſorrow, he ſolely employed himſelf in amaſſing wealth, and, from thence forward, behaved rather like a Sovereign Prince than a Governor.

CHAP. X.

Pedro de la Gaſca, *a Perſon of diſtinguiſhed Virtue, is made Governor of* Peru, *with the Title of Preſident, upon which* Gonzalo Pizarro *every where loſes Ground; but at length defeats* Centeno, *one of* De Gaſca's *Generals, and is afterwards ruined, by rejecting* Carvajal's *Advice; for, being abandoned by his People, at the Meeting of both Armies, he ſurrenders himſelf Priſoner, and is condemned and beheaded: After which,* De Gaſca *being perplexed about the Diviſion of the Lands, returns to* Spain.

CHARLES V. being uneaſy at hearing of theſe dangerous diviſions, now ſent *Pedro de la Gaſca*, with the title of Preſident of the royal court of Peru, and all the power of a Sovereign Prince; ſo that he could make or repeal

repeal laws, and pardon or puniſh treaſon, in what manner he thought fit: and, indeed, he had the ſame authority as the Emperor would have had, had he himſelf come in perſon. Though a prieſt, and a brother of the inquiſition, he had an excellent character, and was diſtinguiſhed by his mildneſs, affability, penetration, and ſagacity; by the ſtricteſt honeſty, and the moſt intrepid courage. His commiſſion was dated at *Vienna*, in the beginning of the year 1546, and he arrived at *Panama* about the middle of *July* the ſame year, where his agreeable behaviour procured him many friends, among whom was *Hinojoſa*, *Pizarro*'s Admiral; but it was agreed, that his revolt ſhould be kept a profound ſecret, till it ſhould be known how *Pizarro* behaved to the meſſenger ſent to him by *Gaſca*, with a letter from the Emperor, and another from himſelf.

Pizarro received this meſſenger in a very reſpectful manner, and ſubmitted to an aſſembly of his principal officers, the inſtructions he brought; in which a general amneſty was offered to all who would acknowledge the Preſident's authority, with the promiſe of a proper proviſion to be made for *Pizarro* and his family, in conſideration of their ſervices. *Carvajal* warmly declared for accepting theſe terms, in which he was ſeconded by all moderate people: but ſeveral perſons, of a reſtleſs diſpoſition, prevailed on *Pizarro* to ſend a ſhort defence of his conduct, and to deſire to be confirmed in the government of *Peru*, to which he alledged he had an undoubted right, as

as being heir to his brother, who had conquered the country.

Gaſca's meſſenger, whoſe name was *Panigua*, had private orders, in caſe he found *Pizarro*'s party very ſtrong, to grant this requeſt; but being privately viſited by moſt of the principal people, who agreed to join the royal ſtandard as ſoon as the Preſident arrived in *Peru*, he injudiciouſly ſuppreſſed theſe orders, of which he had afterwards great reaſon to repent, ſince his ſilence in this particular occaſioned the deſtruction of many *Spaniards*.

About this time *Pizarro* was informed of the defection of *Hinojoſa*, and ſeveral other perſons on whom he placed the greateſt confidence; and that the two gentlemen he had ſent into *Spain*, with a defence of his conduct, had deſerted his intereſt. Soon after, the city of *Cuzco* was ſurprized by ſtratagem. *Centeno*, an officer who had fought with great bravery under the Vice-roy *Nunez*, but, after his defeat, took refuge in the mountains, once more made his appearance, declared for *Pedro de la Gaſca*, and was joined by about 80 horſemen, with whom he reſolved to ſurprize that city, notwithſtanding its being garriſoned by 300 men, under the command of *De Robles*, a perſon ſtrongly attached to *Pizarro*. For this purpoſe, he ordered ſome *Indians*, as ſoon as it was dark, to drive ſome mules, and other beaſts of burden, with a great noiſe, and matches lighted at the pommel of each ſaddle, up a certain ſtreet. This alarming the garriſon, the ſoldiers marched out to the place where the confuſion was raiſed; while *Centeno* and his people

entering the town on the oppoſite ſide, attacked them in the rear, and put them in ſuch diſorder, that they immediately fled, leaving him in poſſeſſion of the place; and *De Robles* himſelf, having taken refuge in a convent, was made priſoner. Thus was this action crowned with all the ſucceſs that could be deſired; when the late Governor treating *Centeno* in an inſolent manner, the latter gave orders for his being beheaded.

By this time the Preſident *De Gaſca* was arrived in the province of *Quito*, when he cauſed a general amneſty to be publiſhed, and a repeal of the laws which had been ſo diſagreeable to the people. His army was now increaſed by reinforcements from *La Plata*, *Arequipa*, and other places, and amounted to above 1000 men; and as the Preſident's army was daily increaſing, he reſolved to march towards *Lima*, which had declared in his favour, a few days after *Pizarro* had marched from thence towards *Arequipa*. But the latter finding that things went every where againſt him, and that he was but little above 400 ſtrong, though he had been joined by *Acoſta* with 50 horſe, he turned off to the ſouthward in order to eſtabliſh a colony on the eaſt ſide of the mountains of *Potoſi*, the ſilver mines of which were but juſt diſcovered; and in caſe that proved unſucceſsful, he intended to retreat farther ſouthward, and make a ſettlement in *Chili*. *Centeno*, however, blocked up his paſſage with an army of between 1000 and 1200 men; and *Pizarro*, after having tried in vain to bring him over to his ſide, reſolved, after conſulting with *Acoſta*, to force a paſſage through

through his camp, though his army did not amount to 500 men; for which purpoſe *Acoſta* made his attack in the night, but being diſcovered, was obliged to retire, though without loſs.

The next day both armies drew up in ſight of each other, when the courage and conduct of *Carvajal* ſupplied the place of numbers. He armed every man with two muſquets, for many who had deſerted left their arms behind them, and commanded his people not to move from the poſt in which he had fixed them, till the enemy were cloſe upon them; and his orders were ſo well obeyed, that, though *Pizarro*'s cavalry were at firſt cloſely preſſed, *Centeno* was at laſt entirely routed; and after having in vain endeavoured to rally his men, was obliged to eſcape by private roads to *Lima*.

Pizarro, being now joined by many of the vanquiſhed, marched to take poſſeſſion of *Cuzco*. Mean while the Preſident's army daily increaſed, he being joined by *Centeno* and ſeveral other good officers, among whom was *Pedro de Valdivia*. This laſt gentleman had been Governor of *Chili*; but finding his force too ſmall to maintain himſelf in his poſt, had taken ſhipping at *St. Jago* for *Lima*, with a large quantity of treaſure, which he deſigned to diſpoſe of in raiſing recruits. But on his arrival at *Lima* he joined the Preſident, who received him in the moſt reſpectful manner. His coming was conſidered as a very valuable acquiſition; for he was one of the beſt ſoldiers in

America, and his intrepidity and foreſight made him a proper match for *Carvajal*.

Gaſca being thus reinforced found himſelf at the head of 1500 men, and with this army determined to march in ſearch of *Pizarro*; who, being fluſhed with ſucceſs, raſhly reſolved to meet him, though the experienced *Carvajal* aſſured him, that it would be their entire ruin, and made it evident that the moſt judicious ſtep he could take, would be to diſtreſs the Preſident's army, by retiring before him to the ſouthward, and carrying off all the proviſions. But *Pizarro* was deaf to all his arguments; and, though *Carvajal* offered to prevent the enemy from paſſing the river with only 200 foot and 50 horſe, his propoſal was ſlighted; and, after every opportunity of ſtraitning the Preſident was diſregarded, both armies were drawn up on the 9th of *April* 1548. The victory was not long in diſpute; for *Carvagal*, who was diſguſted at *Pizarro*'s perverſeneſs, had refuſed all command. *Garcilaſſo de la Vega*, father to the hiſtorian, went over to the Preſident, and was followed by the whole right wing, and ſeveral ſquadrons of horſe: at which *Carvajal*, who acted only as a private man, began to ſing aloud part of an old ballad that ſeemed well adapted to the occaſion; while the remainder of the men ſeeing themſelves thus abandoned, threw down their arms and fled, when *Pizarro* being left with only a few officers, turned to *Acoſta*, and calmly ſaid, "Well, brother *John*, what are we to do?" "Why, die like *Romans*," he replied: "No," returned *Pizarro*, "let us rather fall like Chriſtians." They then

moved

moved towards *Gaſca*'s army, where *Pizarro* ſurrendered himſelf to *Pedro de Villavicentio*, who, with great politeneſs, refuſed to take his ſword and dagger. *Gonzalo* behaved before *Gaſca*, who accuſed him of rebelling againſt the Emperor, with great firmneſs, and alledged, that he had not aſſumed the government, till it was conferred upon him by the Judges, tho' it was his, in right of the commiſſion granted by the Emperor to his brother and his heirs. That *Nunez* had been killed in battle; and that he had been forced to oppoſe him, in order to reſtore the public peace; and concluded with bidding the Governor look round him, and then added, "You may recollect that this "whole country was annexed to the throne of "*Spain* by my brother's valour. I too contri- "buted to it; and did I, who have been his aſ- "ſiſtant, and am the only repreſentative of that "brother, aſk any thing unreaſonable, when I "inſiſted upon being made its Governor? I "dare not tax the Emperor with injuſtice, but I "cannot help ſaying, That if he ſaw my ſitua- "tion, and was allowed to do it with impartial "eyes, inſtead of treating me as a rebel, he "would give me a ſtill larger reward, than that "for which I have been forced to contend." *Gaſca* was diſpleaſed with this defence, and ordered him into the cuſtody of *Centeno*, by whom he was treated with the higheſt reſpect.

Gaſca ſoon after held a council of war, in which Judges were appointed to try *Pizarro* and his followers; it being reſolved to determine their fate as ſpeedily as poſſible, leſt ſome change

ſhould happen in their favour; and accordingly *Pizarro*, old *Carvajal*, *Acoſta*, and *Guevarra*, were tried, convicted, and ſentenced to be hanged; and this ſentence was inſtantly executed upon all but *Pizarro*, who, in conſideration of the nobility of his brother, was beheaded the next day, in the 42d year of his age; after which, the houſes of *Pizarro*, both at *Lima* and *Cuzco*, were razed to the ground, and the places on which they ſtood ſown with ſalt. There was alſo erected a marble pillar on which his crimes were inſcribed, and his head, with that of *Carvajal*, was ſet up in the market-place of *Lima*.

The Preſident having made theſe ſacrifices, proclaimed a general pardon, and retired to *Cuzco*, where he ſtaid for ſome time, and was greatly perplexed in diſtributing the land among the ſoldiers, in which he found it impoſſible to ſatisfy their ſeveral demands, till at length being wearied out with their ſollicitations, he reſolved to eſcape from them at once, and therefore privately withdrew to *Lima*, whence he went to *Panama*, in order to embark for *Spain*, and it is ſaid carried with him near two millions for the Emperor's uſe, and not a ducat for himſelf. But while he continued at *Panama*, he narrowly eſcaped loſing the treaſure he had amaſſed for the Emperor, by an inſurrection, which he however happily ſuppreſſed. He then embarked at *Nombre de Dios* for *Spain* in the year 1550, and at his arrival, the Emperor was ſo pleaſed with his conduct, that he gave him the biſhopric of *Siguenea*, a city in *Old Caſtile*.

THE

THE SETTLEMENT OF *BRASIL*, BY THE PORTUGUESE,

And its ſeveral Revolutions.

CHAP. I.

The Diſcovery of Braſil *by Don* Pedro Alvarez de Cabral. *The ſmall Advantages at firſt expected from it. Some Account of the Country, and its antient Inhabitants, and the Manner in which it was firſt ſettled by the* Portugueſe.

IN the 2d voyage of the *Portugueſe* to the *Eaſt Indies* in 1500, *De Cabal*, after paſſing the *Cape de Verde* iſlands, ſtood ſo far out to ſea with a view of avoiding the calms, common on the coaſt of *Africa*, that on the 24th of *April* he obſerved an unknown country on the weſt; but the

ſea running high, he was obliged to ſail along the coaſt as far as 15° ſouth latitude; where finding a good haven, he gave it the name of *Porto Seguro*, or the *Safe Port*; and the country itſelf he called the *Land of the Holy Ghoſt*; but this name was afterwards changed to that of *Braſil* from its abounding with *Braſil* wood, which had been ſo called in *Europe* about 300 years before this country was diſcovered.

Cabral ſent ſome people on ſhore to examine this new country, and they reporting that it was well watered, extremely fertile, full of fruit trees, and inhabited by a mild and gentle people, he reſolved to ſuffer his men to refreſh themſelves on ſhore. On his landing he found the place exactly agreed with the deſcription that had been given of it, and that the peaceful natives, were ſo far from offering any inſult to the *Portugueſe*, that they received them with more kindneſs than they had reaſon to expect. As *De Cabral* had ſome condemned criminals on board, whoſe ſentence had been changed from that of death to tranſportation, he left two of theſe fellows in the country, to learn the language, to make farther diſcoveries, and to acquire the beſt knowledge they were able, of this unknown land and its inhabitants. Being ſenſible that this diſcovery was of great importance, he reſolved to loſe no time, in ſending an account of it to the King of *Portugal*, and therefore immediately diſpatched one of his veſſels back to *Liſbon*, with ſome perſons on board, on whoſe fidelity he could depend, together with one of the natives, in order to his being inſtructed in

the *Portugueſe* language. He alſo ſet up a ſtone croſs as a monument of his having been there, and of his having taken poſſeſſion of the country in behalf of the King of *Portugal*; which was the more neceſſary, as *Columbus* was then on his third voyage, making ſuch diſcoveries as amazed all *Europe*.

In conſequence of this advice, the King of *Portugal* ſent ſeveral perſons to make diſcoveries of the coaſts, who ſoon found that this was part of the continent of that new world diſcovered by *Columbus*; upon which great diſputes aroſe between the two crowns, about the extent and boundaries of this country diſcovered by the *Portugueſe*; but it was at laſt ſettled, that from the river of *Maranon* to the river of *Plate* ſhould be yeilded to the King of *Portugal*.

Affairs in the beginning went on very ſlowly: the firſt *Portugueſe* inhabitants were ſufficiently ſenſible that the ſoil was fertile, the air temperate, and the country well watered; but they could report no more. *Braſil* appeared a pleaſant, fruitful, and well ſituated country, capable indeed of furniſhing abundance of the neceſſaries of life, though it was imagined to be deſtitute of gold and ſilver.

Upon theſe reports, the Miniſtry did not deſert the country, though they contented themſelves with tranſporting thither from time to time thoſe villains whoſe crimes brought them under the cenſure of the law; which not only gave the *Portugueſe* a mean opinion of the colony, but proved an effectual method of corrupting the poor *Indians*.

Indeed

Indeed neither theſe diſcoverers nor the court of *Portugal*, could form any diſtinct idea of the importance of ſo vaſt a country, which, according to its preſent boundaries, may be reckoned 2000 miles from north to ſouth, and 1000 from eaſt to weſt; though the *Portugueſe* even to this time have ſcarce any where penetrated 500 miles. As the northern parts of the country lie near the equator, they are ſubject to great rains and variable winds, particularly about the months of *March* and *September*, when they are frequently diſturbed with hurricanes and tempeſts, which lay the country under water.

The middle part of *Braſil* from 5°. of ſouth latitude to the tropic, has the winds and ſeaſons directly the reverſe of thoſe in other parts of the world, within the ſame latitudes; for in them the dry ſeaſon comes on when the ſun advances to the northward, and the wet ſeaſon begins when the ſun returns to the ſouthward; but here the wet ſeaſon begins in *April*, when the ſouth-eaſt wind ſets in, with violent tornadoes, thunder and lightening; and in *September*, when the wind ſhifts to eaſt-north-eaſt, it brings with it a clear ſky and fair weather. There is no country between the tropics where the heats are more tolerable, or the air more healthful, it being conſtantly refreſhed with breezes from the ſea, and cooled by the lakes and rivers which annually overflow their banks; and in the inland part of the country, the winds from the mountains are ſtill cooler than thoſe that blow from the ocean.

That

That part of *Braſil* which lies more to the ſouth, and without the tropic of *Capricorn*, is in all reſpects one of the fineſt countries in the known world; but here the *Portugueſe* dominions are narrow, they being confined by the *Spaniſh* territories and the river *Plate*.

The *Indians* differ very little in ſtature or complexion from the *Portugueſe* themſelves; but much exceed them in ſtrength and vigour. Some lived in villages, and others moved about according to their humours. Theſe villages conſiſted only of three or four very large houſes; in each of which a whole family or tribe lived together, under the authority of the eldeſt parent. They procured ſubſiſtence by fowling and fiſhing, and made up the reſt of their diet with the fruits of the earth; but though they had no luxurious plenty, yet, in ſo fertile a country, they were in no great danger of want. They were, however, continually at war with each other; but for what cauſe, is not eaſily determined, unleſs we ſhould admit what ſome old writers affirm, that they made theſe wars chiefly that they might kill and eat each other, eſteeming human fleſh the greateſt dainty. But perhaps the teſtimony of thoſe, who own themſelves guilty of extirpating thouſands of theſe poor creatures, to whom they could have no quarrel worthy of rational beings, ought not to be of much weight; ſince men are apt to calumniate and miſrepreſent thoſe they have injured; as if by aggravating their vices, they could juſtify, or at leaſt palliate, their own. And beſides, as none of the late travellers obſerve any ſign of their ever being canni-

cannibals, they ought to be vindicated from ſo cruel an aſperſion.

The *Portugueſe* and *Dutch* writers give the name of *Tapuyers* to the native inhabitants of the north part of *Braſil*, and that of *Tupinambies* or *Tupanamboys* to thoſe who dwell in the ſouth of *Braſil*; but divide theſe again into ſeveral petty nations, who ſpeak different languages, though their manners and cuſtoms are much the ſame.

The *Tapuyers* are pretty tall, and as they live almoſt under the equator, are of a dark copper colour, their hair, which is black, hanging over their ſhoulders; but they have no beards nor hair on any part of their bodies, and go naked, the men only incloſing their nudities in a caſe, and the women concealing theirs with leaves; the men alſo were a cap or coronet of feathers. Their ornaments are glittering ſtones, hanging to their lips and noſtrils, and bracelets of feathers upon their arms: ſome of them paint their bodies of various colours; while others rubbing themſelves with gums, ſtick beautiful feathers upon their ſkins, which at a diſtance make them look more like fowls than human creatures.

The *Tupinambies* who inhabit the ſouth of *Braſil*, are of a moderate ſtature, and not of ſo dark a complexion as their northern neighbours, who live nearer the line. They are indeed neither of them ſo dark as the *Africans* in the ſame latitude, for there were no Negroes in *America*, till they were tranſported thither by the *Portugueſe* and *Spaniards*. The *Tupinambies*, however, reſemble the *Africans* in their flat noſes, which being eſteemed a beauty, are made ſo by art in their in-

The Brasilians and their Houses.

7 AP 53

infancy. They have alſo black lank hair upon their heads; but, like the *Tapuyers*, have no hair on their bodies and faces, and, like them, paint their bodies.

The general food of the *Braſilians* is the caſſavi or mandioka root dried to powder, of which they make cakes like our ſea-biſcuits. This flour they alſo carry with them on journeys, and it being infuſed in water, ſerves them both as meat and drink: they do not appear to have had any corn till the *Europeans* carried it thither. They alſo feed on other roots, fruit and herbs; on wild-fowl, the veniſon they take in hunting, and on fiſh, and with every thing eat a great deal of pepper. They generally drink ſpring-water, of which they are ſaid to have the beſt and the greateſt variety in the world; yet they have other kind of liquors made of the fruits preſſed and infuſed, or of honey, with which they ſometimes get very drunk, ſitting whole days and nights over their cups.

Before the arrival of the *Portugueſe*, they were maſters of the arts of ſpinning, weaving, and building their houſes, and of forming their arms, which conſiſted of bows, arrows, lances and darts; and they had ſome knowledge of the virtues of ſeveral herbs and drugs, which they frequently adminiſtred with ſucceſs to the ſick.

Hunting, fowling and fiſhing were then rather their buſineſs than amuſement, theſe being abſolutely neceſſary for the ſupport of their families, in a country where they had no tame cattle or corn; drinking, dancing and ſinging were more properly their diverſions, which they practiſed

tiſed on their days of rejoicing for a victory, or on the birth of their children. They are at preſent great ſmokers and take the ſtrongeſt tobacco; their pipes are a hollow reed or cane, and the bowl is a large nut-ſhell that almoſt holds an handful of tobacco.

In ſhort, they are a tractable and ingenious people, ready to learn any art or ſcience the *Portugueſe* will teach them, and taking nothing ſo kindly of the Prieſts, as the inſtructing of their children; whence the Jeſuits have made many converts; and thoſe who live under the *Portugueſe*, generally conform to their cuſtoms in eating, drinking, and cloathing. They are but little inclined to labour, from their not being infected with avarice: for their deſires are but few, and thoſe eaſily gratified. Their greateſt vice is their thirſt of revenge.

To return to the ſteps by which the *Portugueſe* ſettlements in *Braſil* became at length ſo conſiderable.--The crown had at firſt recourſe to the making extenſive grants to ſuch as were inclined to ſettle there, or had the power of ſending others; whence ſome of the richeſt and moſt powerful of the nobility had diſtricts given them equal in extent to *Portugal* itſelf. This was at firſt attended with little inconvenience, ſince the King might, without expence, give to others what he never actually poſſeſſed. This ſtep was the more neceſſary, as the whole attention both of the Miniſters and Nobility was taken up with the *Eaſt-Indies*, where the latter found means to repair their fortunes by obtaining governments, by which they ſoon acquired vaſt eſtates; while

thoſe

thoſe who were contented to try their fortunes in this new colony, found that the natives were reſolved not to bear the yoke of ſlavery, and grew deſperate at every attempt to bring them into ſubjection.

The fertility of the country, however, made ſome amends for theſe inconveniencies, by drawing abundance of people ftom other parts of *America* to ſettle there, where they erected a new kind of government, dictated by neceſſity, in which every maſter of a family was both a planter and a ſoldier. He laid out as much land as himſelf and his family could cultivate, and daily performed his military exerciſes to enable himſelf to defend his property; and hence every diſtrict had the title of Captainſhip; which they ſtill retain, though the ſtate of affairs is abſolutely changed.

By this means the colony grew apace, and in fifty years time ſpread over a large tract of country, and erected many good towns, the principal of which were *Tamacara*, *Fernambuca*, *Ilheos*, *Porto Segura*, and *St. Vincent*, each of which was ſurrounded by a populous and well cultivated territory.

The flouriſhing ſtate of *Braſil* ſoon began to awaken the attention of the court; King *John* III. became conc rned at the grants made by his predeceſſors, and therefore in the year 1549, ungenerouſly revoked all thoſe made to the original proprietors. The ſame year he made *Thomas de Souſa* Governor-general of *Braſil*, who ſetting ſail with a fleet of ſix men of war, carried with him many officers, civil and military,

with a conſiderable body of ſoldiers, and ſix fathers of the new order of Jeſuits, who were to convert the *Indians*. He had alſo a new plan of power adjuſted according to the views of the court, and was directed to build a new town in the bay of *All Saints*.

De Souſa, ſoon after his arrival in *Braſil*, began to enter upon the execution of what he was ordered to perform. He made war upon the natives, built the town of *St. Salvador*, and erected monaſteries for the Jeſuits.

What *De Souſa* could not finiſh, was completed by *Edward Acoſta*, his ſucceſſor, in whose time the number of towns and of the inhabitants was doubled; he was alſo obliged to ſtrengthen the towns, by erecting better fortifications than thoſe with which they had been hitherto ſurrounded. He therefore demoliſhed the old fortifications, which were of earth, and raiſing others of brick and ſtone, furniſhed them with artillery, the neceſſity of which was ſoon juſtified by experience.

CHAP. II.

Attempts made by the French *to ſettle a Colony in* Braſil *by the* Sieur de Villegagnon, *Capt.* Riffaut, *and* M. Rivardier, *without Succeſs.*

AT this time the affairs of *France* being in the greateſt confuſion, and the diſputes between thoſe of the church of *Rome* and the

Calviniſts being carried to the utmoſt height, many of the moſt active and induſtrious people were deſirous of leaving their native ſoil, and ſeeking an eaſier and more contented ſtate in diſtant climates. Among theſe was *Nicholas Durant*, Lord of *Villegagnon*, Knight of *Malta*, and Vice-Admiral of *Britany*, who being treated ill at *Nantz*, ſuddenly reſolved to leave the kingdom, and carry a colony into ſome diſtant part of the world; and hearing ſome accounts of *Braſil*, he drew up a ſcheme for fixing a ſettlement in that country. This he preſented to *Gaſpur de Coligny*, Admiral of *France*, deſiring his aſſiſtance towards fitting out a ſquadron for that purpoſe.

The Admiral was diſtinguiſhed for his abilities and virtues, and, being a very zealous Proteſtant, readily promiſed to give him all the encouragement he could deſire, in hopes of ſettling a proteſtant colony; that, in caſe the affairs of his friends ſhould be totally ruined in *France*, they might have a place to which they might retire out of the reach of their enemies. *De Villegagnon*, readily undertaking to put this in execution, the Admiral made ſuch a repreſentation of the affair to King *Henry* II. that he had leave to fit out three large veſſels, with a ſufficient number of ſeamen and adventurers on board; and in *May* 1555, this ſmall ſquadron ſailed from *Havre de Grace* for *Braſil*, where, after a tedious and troubleſome voyage, they arrived in *November*.

This colony landed upon a rock, which they found uninhabitable; but marching farther

within land, fixed upon a very commodious ſpot of ground almoſt under the tropic of *Capricorn*, where they erected a convenient fortreſs for their ſecurity both againſt the natives and the *Portugueſe*, which they called fort *Coligny*. From this place the Sieur *De Villegagnon* ſent the Admiral a long account of his proceedings and ſituation; deſcribed the country and its inhabitants, and obſerved that it was extremely practicable to make that both a uſeful and thriving colony; but remarked that ſuch as were ſent to him muſt not expect the delicacies of *Europe*, that their bread was made of a certain root ground to powder, that they had no wine, much fiſh, and ſome veniſon; and that thoſe who could live contentedly upon ſuch proviſions, might find a ſecure retreat at his fort in *Braſil*.

This letter the Admiral communicated to the famous reformer *John Calvin* of *Geneva*, who prevailed on a dozen zealous proteſtants of that city, to engage in the deſign of improving this new ſettlement. *Du Pont*, a man of ſenſe, with a good character, was put at the head of this affair, and with him were joined two miniſters, *Peter Ricker* who had been formerly a Carmelite, and *William Chartier*; theſe ſetting out together from *Geneva*, waited upon the Admiral at *Chatillon*, who gave them a kind reception; and, by his aſſiſtance, joined to their own intereſt, they ſoon got together 300 men, who embarked at *Honfleur* on board three veſſels, in *November*, 1556, and arrived at fort *Coligny* on the 7th of *March*, 1557, where they were received with great joy.

Things, however, did not long continue in this ſituation; for the Sieur *De Villegagnon*, who had pretended to be a rigid *Calviniſt*, ſoon ſhewed, that he had only worn a maſk. This produced a quarrel between him and the miniſter *Richer*, in which the diſputes roſe ſo high, that he drove the latter and all his adherents out of the colony; upon which they ſailed up the *Rio Janeiro*, and eſtabliſhed themſelves upon its banks; where having ſtaid about eight months, they returned to *France*, where they repreſented the Sieur *De Villegagnon*, in the blackeſt colours, as an hypocrite and an impoſtor: at which the Admiral, finding that this affair was not likely to be of any advantage to the proteſtant cauſe, reſolved to give himſelf no farther concern about it.

The Sieur *De Villegagnon* being thus abandoned, took the beſt meaſures he could for the ſecurity of the colony in his abſence, and then returned to *France*; where he endeavoured to raiſe a belief of his being a zealous *Calviniſt*, and publiſhed an apology for his own conduct, in which he painted the miniſters in as bad a light as they had placed him; but finding this produced no good, he retired to a commandery of his own order, and ſpent the remainder of his days in writing againſt the proteſtants. In the mean time the *Portugueſe* laid hold of this opportunity to rid themſelves of their new neighbours; and the next year *Emanuel Sa*, Governor of *Braſil*, cut off the *French* that were left behind, and demoliſhed their fort.

It is obſervable, that during the ſhort time the *French* were poſſeſſed of this ſettlement, they made a greater progreſs in trade, and eſtabliſhed a more friendly correſpondence with the natives, than the *Portugueſe* had been able to do in about fifty years. This indeed was owing to a very odd accident. About twenty years before, a ſhip from *Normandy* having been loſt upon that coaſt, ſome of the men got on ſhore, where being well received by the natives, they married among them, and exactly conformed to their manners, and theſe men were of great ſervice to the colony.

The *Portugueſe* now for ſome time quietly enjoyed their ſettlements, till at length one Captain *Riffaut*, who had been cruizing on the *Spaniards*, touching at the iſland of *Maragnan* on the coaſt of *Braſil*, contracted ſo great an intimacy with the *Indian* Chief of the iſland, that he invited him to bring a ſufficient number of his countrymen to fix a ſettlement there, promiſing to give him all the aſſiſtance in his power. This offer the *French* Captain readily embraced, and, at his return to *France*, found means, by his credit and intereſt, to equip three ſhips, ſo effectually, that there was great reaſon to expect extraordinary ſucceſs; but his men mutinying before he reached the iſland, and the largeſt of his ſhips running upon the coaſt as ſoon as he got to it, by which means ſhe was loſt, he was obliged to return to *France*; but ſome of his people, among whom was M. *De Vaux*, choſe to ſtay with the natives,

natives, who made them extremely welcome: This young gentleman, was remarkably briſk and active; he liked the climate, and continued there ſome time. His behaviour to the *Braſilians* was very engaging, and he in many reſpects proved ſo uſeful to them, that they made the ſame applications to him, as the *Indian* Chief had done to Captain *Riffaut*, which at laſt engaged him to think ſeriouſly upon the ſubject, and to return home by the firſt opportunity.

On M. *De Vaux's* arriving in *France*, he applied to King *Henry* IV. to whom he repreſented the vaſt advantages that would flow from ſuch an eſtabliſhment; upon which that Prince, who had the good of his ſubjects at heart, and was unwilling to place too great a confidence on the credit of a young adventurer, ſent a ſmall veſſel, under the command of M. *Rivardier*, a perſon of great merit, upon whoſe report he could depend, who took M. *De Vaux* with him, and after remaining ſix months in *Braſil*, returned to *France*, from whence he made ſeveral voyages back, before the government could come to any reſolution about ſettling a colony. Preparations were, however, at length actually made for ſending a ſtrong ſquadron thither, when a ſtop was put to them by the murder of *Henry* IV. But M. *Rivardier* was ſo fond of the place, and ſo fully perſuaded that a ſettlement there would immediately turn to account, that he embarked his whole private fortune, and engaged ſeveral of his friends to do ſo to; by which means

means he equipt three ſtout veſſels, and engaged about 300 men to go to *Braſil*, with whom he embarked at *Cancale*, on the coaſt of *Britany*, and in *July* following arrived at the iſland of *Maragnan*.

He there erected a fortreſs on the ſummit of a hill near the beſt port in the iſland, between two fine rivers that waſhed both ſides of the mountain, and ran from thence into the ſea. Upon the baſtions of this fort he mounted twenty-two pieces of cannon; and every thing ſeemed to promiſe all the ſucceſs that could be deſired, when, about two years after their firſt arrival, a ſtrong ſquadron, ſent by Don *Jerom de Albuquerque*, the *Portugueſe* Governor of *Braſil*, appearing before the bay, ſoon forced them to ſurrender, and, according to his orders, the place was inſtantly demoliſhed; which cured the *French* of all farther thoughts of ſettling in that country.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

The Dutch *make themſelves Maſters of* Braſil; *but are driven out by the united Force of* Spain *and* Portugal. *The* Dutch, *however, being reſolved to make a freſh Attempt, ſend a large Fleet under the Command of Admiral* Lank, *with a Body of Land Forces commanded by General* Wardenbourgh. *The Latter takes the City of* Olinda, *and all the Coaſt to the South; while Admiral* Lank *takes an Iſland called the* Sandy Receif. *Admiral* Pater *being afterwards ſent from* Holland *with a large Fleet, the* Dutch *oblige the* Portugueſe *to raiſe the Siege of* Olinda; *and this brave Admiral, with only ſix Ships, engages the* Portugueſe *Fleet of Forty-five, and comes off with great Honour.*

IN the year 1581, the Crown of *Portugal* devolving on the head of *Phillip* II. King of *Spain*, he not only became poſſeſſed of all the rich countries in *America* diſcovered by the *Spaniards*, but of *Braſil*, and all the *Portugueſe* ſettlements in the *Eaſt-Indies*. Theſe he left to his ſucceſſors, together with the war he had carried on againſt the ſeven United Provinces, who had ſhaken off their dependence on the Crown of *Spain*, and formed themſelves into a Republic, which, by attending to trade, made the moſt rapid progreſs. This new Republic, by forming an *Eaſt-India* company, obtained ſuch pro-

prodigious advantage, that, in 1624, they were induced to ſet up alſo a *Weſt-India* company, which from its firſt inſtitution proved fatal to the *Portugueſe*.

The *Dutch* being now ſenſible of the ſtate of *Braſil*, and the ſmall reſiſtance they were likely to meet with in caſe they made a deſcent on the coaſt, which was no leſs than 1200 leagues in extent, equipped a ſquadron under the command of *James Willikens*, which entering the bay of *All Saints*, the *Portugueſe* were ſo frightened, that, inſtead of providing for their defence, they immediately uſed all poſſible methods to carry off and ſecure their effects.

The *Dutch* obſerving the conſternation into which they had thrown the enemy, inſtantly landed, and without much difficulty made themſelves maſters of St. *Salvador*, the capital of *Braſil*. *Don Diego de Mendoza*, the *Portugueſe* Governor, not having the courage to defend the place, fled; but *Michael Texeira*, the Archbiſhop, who was of one of the beſt families in *Portugal*, notwithſtanding his being in years, ſummoned all the Clergy and Monks about him, and repreſenting the neceſſity they were under of laying aſide their clerical capacities, prevailed on them to take up arms; and tho' deſerted by the Governor, the ſoldiers and the inhabitants, they for ſome time made a very gallant defence, and at laſt retreated to a neighbouring town; where, after acting the part of ſoldiers, they turned pioneers, and, under the conduct of the Archbiſhop, fortified the place, and gave the enemy as much trou-

ble

The Dutch Seize St. Salvador.

7 AP 53

ble as if they had been the moſt regular troops in the world.

By the taking of this town, the *Dutch* not only acquired an immenſe plunder, but became maſters of the largeſt and beſt peopled diſtrict in the whole country, and ſeemed in a fair way of making, in a ſhort time, a complete conqueſt of the whole colony; which they would probably have done, had it not been for the heroic Archbiſhop, who aſſumed the title of Captain-General, an office which he ſaid came to him from Heaven, in the legible characters of public neceſſity.

The news of this misfortune no ſooner reached *Portugal*, than it threw both the city of *Liſbon* and the whole kingdom into confuſion, which was increaſed by the ſuſpicions of the Nobility, that the *Spaniſh* Miniſtry where not much diſpleaſed at this event, as it would leſſen the wealth and power of the grandees of *Portugal*, who had the greateſt part of their eſtates in *Braſil*. However, King *Philip* IV. in whoſe reign this happened, ſhewed that theſe ſuſpicions were but ill founded. He immediately ſent orders to *Portugal* to equip a fleet for the recovery of St. *Salvador*, and at the ſame time wrote a letter with his own hand to the Nobility, deſiring their aſſiſtance on this occaſion.

This revived the ſpirits of the nation, and the *Portugueſe* Lords exerted themſelves ſo effectually, that in three months time they had a fleet of 26 ſail ready to put to ſea: but though the *Spaniards* did not make equal diſpatch, yet, in *February* 1626, their fleet joined that of *Portugal*,

Portugal, and they ſet ſail, under the command of Don *Frederic de Toledo Oſorio*, Marquis of *Valdueſa*, with 15,000 men on board.

In the mean time, the *Dutch* being in poſſeſſion of St. *Salvador* and the adjacent country, began very raſhly to extend themſelves on every ſide, either from contempt of the *Portugueſe*, or an extravagant thirſt of plunder. The heroic Archbiſhop, however, ſoon convinced them of their miſtake; he had now aſſembled 1500 men, and with theſe not only cut off moſt of their parties, but at laſt forcing them to take ſhelter in the town, blocked them up, and reduced them to great diſtreſs; which he had no ſooner done, than he reſigned the command firſt to *Nunez Marino*, and afterwards to Don *Francis de Mauro*, declaring that his own commiſſion expired with that neceſſity, which had forced him to take it up.

Things were in this ſituation, when the united fleets of *Spain* and *Portugal* arrived in the Bay of *All Saints*. *Don Emanuel de Meneſſez* immediately landed 4000 men, and joined the army before St. *Salvador*. The *Dutch* Governor was, however, reſolved to defend it to the laſt extremity; but the garriſon mutinying, forced him to ſurrender on the 20th of *April*; when the *Spaniſh* and *Portugueſe* commanders, ſuppoſing that the war was at an end, and that the *Dutch*, like the *French*, would be afraid of making any new attempts upon *Braſil*, returned home with the fleets in triumph.

They were however greatly miſtaken, for the rich plunder of St. *Salvador*, which had been brought

brought by Admiral *Willikens* into *Holland*, made the *Dutch* deſirous of engaging in other expeditions of the ſame kind, and encouraged the *Weſt-India* company to think of making another expedition. They accordingly fitted out a ſtrong fleet of 46 men of war, commanded by Admiral *Lonk*, with a conſiderable body of land forces on board, under Gen. *Wardenbourg*, which ſetting ſail, arrived in ſight of *Fernambuca* on the 3d of *February* 1630, and General *Wardenbourg* landing with near 3000 men on the 15th of the ſame month, marched directly towards the city of *Olinda*, which he found covered by three forts, with a numerous garriſon in each: he however attacked and carried them all, but not without a vigorous reſiſtance; and this ſucceſs ſo frightened the inhabitants of the city, that they immediately ſurrendered, though the natives, who had turned *Chriſtians*, ſhewed great ſpirit, and behaved on this, and on every other occaſion, with the utmoſt courage and fidelity.

While General *Wardenbourg* was thus employed on ſhore, Admiral *Lonk* was no leſs active by ſea; and as the *Portugueſe* had no conſiderable naval force to oppoſe him, he, in a very ſhort time, reduced all the coaſt to the ſouth of *Olinda*, ſecuring and fortifying every place that fell into his hands; it being reſolved, to obtain ſuch a footing in the country, as would enable the *Dutch* to keep their ground againſt the whole force of *Portugal*.

With this view Admiral *Lonk* reſolved, at all events, to make himſelf maſter of a very ſtrong poſt, that ſeemed the fitteſt for his purpoſe, and

of which it is neceſſary that we ſhould give our readers ſome account.

The whole coaſt of *Braſil* is bordered by a thick and flat ridge of rocks, which is in ſome places twenty, and in others thirty yards broad; and were it not for ſeveral breaks and paſſages in this rocky incloſure, it would be impoſſible to approach the ſhore. In particular, there is a very large paſſage towards the north of *Olinda*, but the ridge of rocks appears again almoſt before the city, and the inhabitants paſs to it in boats at high water. This part of the ridge is called by the *Portugueſe Reciffo*, and by the *Dutch* the *Receif*. On the north point is a very narrow open paſſage for the ſhips to approach the ſhore, and between this ridge of rocks and the continent, is a ſandy iſland about a league in length, called the *Sandy Receif*. Upon this iſland, which is in 8° 20′ ſouth latitude, was a good caſtle called *Fort St. George*, well provided with artilley, and eſteemed impregnable, and of this the *Dutch* Admiral made himſelf maſter when having ſtrengthened the *Stony Receif*, he made this the chief ſeat of commerce, and afterwards it became one of the moſt conſiderable places in *Braſil*.

The *Portugueſe* and *Spaniards* were exceſſively alarmed at the news of this ſecond attempt upon *Braſil*, and at the *Dutch* having conquered the Captainſhip of *Fernambuca*; they therefore reſolved to ſend thither immediately a force ſufficient to drive them out, and effectually to ſecure the country to themſelves for the future; but

the diſſaffection of the *Portugueſe* to the *Spaniſh* government, divided and perplexed their meaſures ſo, that they were a long time in fitting out a fleet; during which the *Dutch* were employed in fortifying themſelves, in extending their conqueſts, and in taking all the neceſſary precautions for their defence; wherein they proceeded with the utmoſt induſtry and vigilance.

The *Dutch* fleet no ſooner returned from *Braſil*, than Admiral *Pater* was ſent thither with a much ſtronger force, in order to make a conqueſt of the whole country. He arrived in ſight of the coaſt of *Fernambuca* on the 1ſt of *May* 1631, where finding the city of *Olinda* cloſely blocked up by a numerous army, commanded by *Albuquerque*, the famous *Portugueſe* General, who had landed 400 men under the command of an experienced officer, to take a view of the enemies works, in order to form a juſt judgment of the beſt manner of beginning the attack: but the *Dutch* garriſon ſeeing his fleet come to an anchor, and the troops landed, made ſo vigorous a ſally on the beſiegers, as forced them to retire from before the city with conſiderable loſs. Admiral *Pater* now enabled his countrymen to extend their conqueſts very conſiderably, particularly towards the ſouth, intending to attack the city of *St. Salvador* both by ſea and land; but was prevented by his receiving intelligence that the *Spaniards* and *Portugueſe* had ſent a ſtrong fleet, which was actually at ſea, in order to undertake the relief of *Braſil*.

This fleet conſiſted of about thirty ſhips, commanded by Admiral *D'Oquendo*, who ſailed from

Spain in a very indifferent condition: but at the *Canaries* was joined by 15 more, and near the *Cape de Verd* iſlands received ſuch an acceſſion of force, as made *D'Oquendo*'s fleet conſiſt of 54 large ſhips. The *Dutch* Admiral had but 16, but being jealous of the honour of his country, boldly reſolved to fight under this amazing diſadvantage, and was even determined to meet the enemy, which he accordingly did in 6° ſouth latitude: but as ſoon as they appeared in ſight and the *Dutch* fleet ſaw how unequal the diſpute was like to prove, ten of the Captains bore away, and left the Admiral only ſix ſhips to fight an enemy that had almoſt ten times his number; and though he had two flags under him, theſe, to their immortal honour, were two of thoſe who had joined him, ſo that there were three Admirals to ſix ſhips. The battle was long and bloody, for many of the *Portugueſe* ſhips were ſunk; and it is evident, that if the other ten ſhips had ſtaid, victory would have declared for the *Dutch*; but at laſt Admiral *Thys* in the *Prince William* was ſunk, and ſoon after, a ball unhappily falling into the *Dutch* Admiral's powder-room, the ſhip was blown up, and that brave man loſt. Upon this the four *Dutch* ſhips that remained, retired; but did it with ſuch courage and addreſs, that they not only ſafely arrived at *Olinda*, but carried off a *Portugueſe* man of war they had taken, and indeed, it may be ſafely affirmed, there never was a more glorious action.

When Admiral *D'Oquendo* arrived on the coaſt, he was ſatisfied with ſending refreſhments and

and reinforcements to the army under *Albuquerque*, but made no atttempt againſt the city of *Olinda*; the great loſs he had ſuffered in the battle, which amounted in the whole to no leſs than 13 ſail taken and ſunk, made him leave things in a ſtate little better than that in which he found them. He therefore, after repairing his ſhips, ſet ſail for *Liſbon*, in the month of *October*, but in his paſſage had the misfortune to meet with four *Dutch* men of war well manned, who bravely reſolved to attack him, though he had ſtill 40 ſail, and moſt of them large ſhips.

In this engagement *D'Oquendo* loſt the Captain of his own ſhip, with 22 other Captains; his Vice-Admiral, three men of war, two frigates, and about 700 private men; after which he returned home, with the wretched remains of his unfortunate fleet; but the blame fell intirely upon the Miniſters, who, in ſpite of his remonſtrances, had obliged him to ſail with ſhips, half equipped and half manned.

As this misfortune could not be remedied, the Miniſters expreſſed their willingneſs to do all in their power in order to repair it, and therefore gave orders for providing a larger fleet, better equipped and manned, to ſail under the command of *Don Frederic de Toledo*, who had acquired great reputation. But notwithſtanding all their endeavours nothing could be done that ſeaſon, and therefore it was deferred to the next ſpring; when it was reſolved to ſend ſuch a force, as ſhould put an end to the war at once; but as it is much eaſier to lay fine ſchemes in the

cabinet, than to carry them into execution, ſo, notwithſtanding this celebrated Admiral actually proceeded on his voyage with a very large fleet, every way well provided, he returned to *Portugal* without doing any thing of importance.

CHAP. IV.

The ſurpriſing Succeſs of the Dutch *againſt the united Forces of* Spain *and* Portugal, *induces the Directors of the* Weſt-India *Company to ſend Count* Maurice *of* Naſſau, *as Governor of* Braſil, *who, by his wiſe Conduct, and prudent Adminiſtration, ſecures and ſettles the beſt Part of the Country.*

MEAN while the *Dutch* taking advantage of theſe delays, made a ſurpriſing progreſs, and, in the ſpace of ſeven years, reduced under their dominions the Captainſhips of *Fernambuca*, *Tamaraca*, *Paraiba* and *Rio Grande*. In ſhort, they had ſuch aſtoniſhing ſucceſs againſt the *Spaniards*, in this, and other parts of *America*, that from the time of their *Weſt-India* Company's being erected, in 1624, to the year 1637, they deſtroyed, and took from them in money and merchandize, to the value of 45 millions of fiorins, or four millions and a half of our money; and of 800 ſhips fitted out againſt them by the crown of *Spain*, they deſtroyed or took 547.

B

By this ſucceſs the Directors of the *Weſt-India* company were induced to put themſelves upon a level with the *Eaſt-India* company, and were reſolved to place at the head of their affairs, a perſon whoſe credit and power would add ſtrength to their own. With this view they pitched upon Count *John Maurice* of *Naſſau*, a near relation to the Prince of *Orange*, who had diſtinguiſhed himſelf in the ſervice of the States with great applauſe.

This Nobleman, readily accepting the propoſal, was declared Governor of *Braſil* and *South-America*; and that he might enter upon his office in a manner ſuitable to his quality and character, the Company reſolved to fit out a fleet of 32 large ſhips, with 2700 land-forces; but the Count being impatient to be gone, ſailed before they were ready, on the 25th of *October* 1636, with only four ſhips, and 350 ſoldiers on board. With this ſmall ſquadron he arrived on the coaſt of *Braſil* on the 23d of *January* 1637, with *Adrian Vander Duſſen*, who had joined him near the iſland of *Madeira*, and was ſoon followed by other Captains.

Count *Maurice* took the field with two conſiderable bodies of troops, one of which conſiſted of 300 men; with theſe he reſolved to attack the *Portugueſe* army; and the other of 600 was to be employed in various expeditions, in order to divide and diſtract the enemy, who had a large body of forces in the field, under the command of the Count *de Benjola*, an officer of great bravery and experience, who aſſembled the bulk of his army at *Porto Cavallo*. Thither Count

Count *Maurice* marched, and after a very obſtinate reſiſtance, the *Portugueſe* were defeated, and at length forced in their camp, notwithſtanding its being ſtrongly intrenched. The Count *de Banjola* then retired with the remains of his troops, under the cannon of the citadel of *Povacaon*, from whence he retreated on the approach of the *Dutch*, who beſieged and took that fortreſs, in which was a garriſon of 600 men.

Count *Maurice* next took the town of *Openeda* on the river *St. Francis*; built a citadel there, and another at the mouth of the river, by which he effectually covered his new conqueſt. Then returning to *Olinda*, he ſettled the civil and military government; and fitted out two fleets; one under the command of Admiral *Lichthart*, who had orders to attack the ſouth coaſt of *Braſil*; and the other commanded by Commodore *Hanſkins*, who was deſtined to a ſervice of ſtill greater importance, which was fixing themſelves on the oppoſite ſhore of *Africa*. For this purpoſe it was reſolved to attack the caſtle of *St. George de la Mina* on the coaſt of *Guinea*, in the poſſeſſion of the *Portugueſe*; for the *Dutch* having a ſtrong ſettlement in that neighbourhood, the Governor ſent to adviſe Count *Maurice*, that this was the proper time for carrying this important project into execution. Commodore *Hanſkins* joined the *Dutch* Governor on the 25th of *July*, when attacking the caſtle, which was one of the ſtrongeſt in that part of the world, they, after a regular ſiege, obliged the *Portugueſe* to ſurrender. After this ſucceſs,

ſucceſs, Commodore *Hanſkins* returned to *Olinda*, where he was received by Count *Maurice* with all the marks of honour and reſpect, that the performance of ſo important a ſervice deſerved.

The campaign in 1638 was equally glorious for the *Dutch*, for the Count *de Banjola* having aſſembled a numerous army to defend the Captainſhip of *Segerippa*, Count *Maurice* attacked and defeated him, took the capital, and reduced the whole Province. This great ſucceſs induced the natives of *Siarra*, one of the northern Captainſhips, to declare for the *Dutch*, and to offer, upon the promiſe of being reſtored to the enjoyment of their freedom, to aſſiſt them againſt the *Portugueſe*, when a body of troops being ſent to join them, they reduced that whole diſtrict.

Count *Maurice* now reſolved to attack *St. Salvador* in the Bay of *All Saints*, which was conſidered as the capital of all *Braſil:* for this purpoſe he embarked all the troops he could aſſemble at *Olinda*, and landed them in the Bay of *All Saints*, in hopes of ſurpriſing the *Portugueſe*. The Count *de Banjola*, who was in the neighbourhood with a ſmall body of regular troops, immediately threw himſelf into the place, though the Governor was his avowed enemy, and Count *Maurice* expected that the differences which ſubſiſted between them, would facilitate his taking the city. Indeed, the *Portugueſe* Governor at firſt diſputed the command with the Count *de Banjola*; but that nobleman told him, that their quarrels would only ſerve to ruin

ruin them; whereas, if they agreed, each of them might become as great as he could wiſh. To which the Governor anſwered, "Sir, I per-"ceive you are a wiſer man than I, and nobo-"dy ſhall obey your orders more punctually."

Count *Maurice* without much reſiſtance made himſelf maſter of the ſtrong fort of *Albert*, of that of *St. Bartholomew*, and the famous caſtle of *St. Philip*. Encouraged by this ſucceſs he erected two batteries, in order to attack fort *Roſes* which covered the city on one ſide, and a horn-work, that was its principal ſtrength on the other. Between theſe lay a piece of ground, covered with ſhrubs and buſhes, where Count *de Banjola* adviſed the Governor to poſt himſelf with 400 men, while he made a ſally. This ſcheme had the deſired effect, for the *Dutch*, after an obſtinate diſpute, endeavouring to retire through that piece of ground, were attacked in their rear, and loſt four officers of diſtinction, their principal engineer, and 300 of their beſt men; upon which Count *Maurice* abandoned the caſtle he had taken, and raiſed the ſiege with ſome precipitation.

On Count *Maurice*'s return from this fruitleſs expedition, he with the utmoſt diligence applied himſelf to the eſtabliſhment of good order and perfect diſcipline in all parts of his government; fortifying the frontier places, reviewing his troops in perſon, appointing experienced officers to command them, and giving the utmoſt encouragement to ſuch of the natives as ſhewed an inclination to aſſiſt him, or to live peaceably under the protection of the *Dutch*; by which

which means he prevented the enemy from taking advantage of their late ſucceſs.

Mean while the *Spaniſh* government having received an exact account of the ſtate of affairs of *Braſil*, reſolved to ſend a fleet and army ſufficient to put an end to the war at once, by obliging the *Dutch* to abandon all their conqueſts. This fleet conſiſted of 26 galleons double manned, 20 large men of war, and 5000 regular troops, under the command of *Don Fernandez* Count *de las Torres*, who ſet ſail in the autumn of 1639, and received conſiderable reinforcements in his paſſage; but having the misfortune to be detained by calms on the coaſt of *Africa*, the plague broke out in his crouded ſhips, and ſwept away above 3000 men, before he reached *All Saints Bay*; and the remainder of his troops were in ſo bad a condition, that he was obliged to put them into quarters of refreſhment: while the *Dutch* were waiting with great impatience for the ſuccours which ſoon after arrived from *Holland*.

The Count *de las Torres*, however, put to ſea in *January* 1640, with a fleet of 93 ſail great and ſmall, with 12,000 men on board. While Count *Maurice* aſſembled 41 men of war, and waited for the *Portugueſe* within four miles of the port of *Olinda*. This laſt fleet was commanded, under his Excellency, by *William Loos*, a *Dutch* Admiral of great bravery. On the 12th of the ſame month, the fleets met and engaged near the iſland of *Tamaraca*, and fought from one in the afternoon till it was night. In this engagement the *Dutch* loſt their brave Admiral

Loos, but only three other men. The next day he was replaced by *James Huyghens*, who engaging the *Spaniſh* fleet a ſecond time, obtained great advantages. The following day he attacked them a third time with ſtill greater ſucceſs, on the coaſt of *Paraib*, but the greateſt victory was on the fourth day, when the *Portugueſe* ſuffered exceſſively, and were at laſt driven upon the ſhoals on the coaſt, where many periſhed by ſhipwreck, and more by hunger and thirſt. Thoſe who eſcaped endeavoured to return to *Spain*; but great diſputes ariſing among the Commanders, they ſeparated; by which means only two men of war and four galleons arrived ſafe in the ports of *Spain*, and even theſe with much difficulty eſcaped a *Dutch* fleet, that was ſteering for *Braſil*.

Mean while the *Portugueſe* being informed that Count *Maurice* had embarked his whole ſtrength on board his fleet, fell upon the *Dutch* ſettlements and took ſeveral places; but a check was ſoon put to them by *Hanſkins* at the head of a body of planters; and ſoon after Admiral *Lichthart* and Commodore *Cornelius Jol*, arriving with great reinforcements from *Holland*, the former was immediately ſent by Count *Maurice* into the Bay of *All Saints*, where he deſtroyed the country with the utmoſt barbarity, while Commodore *Jol* acted the ſame part in the country near the river *St. Lawrence*.

The Count de *Montalvan*, the *Portugueſe* Viceroy of *Braſil*, immediately ſent deputies to repreſent the cruelty of this behaviour, and to deſire that the proceedings of war might be regulated,

gulated, in order to prevent for the future such horrid ſcenes of murder and devaſtation. As Count *Maurice* had with reluctance given theſe orders, agreeably to the Company's inſtructions, he very gladly embraced this opportunity of giving way to his own inclinations, and offered to ſend Commiſſaries immediately to St. *Salvador*, to ſettle a provincial treaty with the Viceroy: but the departure of theſe Deputies was ſtopped by the arrival of two gentlemen of diſtinction, from the Count *de Montalvan*, who informed Count *Maurice* of the amazing revolution that had happened in *Portugal*, which would probably have a great effect on the ſtate of affairs, as the war in *Braſil* had not hitherto been carried on by the *Dutch* againſt the *Portugueſe* nation, but againſt the *Portugueſe* as ſubjects of *Spain*.

This revolution, which was one of the moſt ſudden and ſucceſsful in the world, happened in *December* 1640; when *John* Duke of *Braganza* ſeated himſelf on the throne of his anceſtors, and took the title of *John* IV. by which means he became poſſeſſed of the whole dominions of *Portugal*, except the little town of *Ceuta* in *Africa*. Count *Maurice* ſoon receiving an exact relation of the whole affair, and foreſeeing that it would be attended either with a peace or truce, between the States-General and the new King, reſolved to exert himſelf with the utmoſt expedition; he therefore made himſelf intirely maſter of the Captainſhip of *Segerippa*, which had been recovered by the *Portugueſe*; reduced the iſland of *Laonda* on the coaſt of

Congo, and that of St. *Thomas*, which lies directly under the Equinoctial; and in purſuance of his inſtructions, which repreſented the Captainſhip of *Maragnan* as a healthy country, abounding with ſugar, cotton, tobacco, ginger, and other valuable commodities, he diſpatched Admiral *Lichthart* and Commodore *Hanſkins*, with ſix men of war and ſix frigates, with which they ſoon reduced the iſland of *Maragnan* and the town of St. *Lewis*, whereupon the reſt of the diſtricts ſubmitted without reſiſtance; ſo that at the end of the year 1641, the *Dutch* were in poſſeſſion of ſeven of the fourteen Captainſhips into which *Braſil* was divided.

King *John* IV. ſoon ſent an Embaſſador to the *Hague* to repreſent to the States-General, the reaſonableneſs of owning his title, and the advantages they ſhould mutually receive from keeping up a good correſpondence. The *Dutch* readily owned his title; but thinking themſelves gainers by the war, and too ſtrong for *Portugal* unſupported by *Spain*, they deferred as long as poſſible the concluſion of the treaty. However, on the 13th of *June* 1641, they ſigned a league offenſive and defenſive with that crown, in relation to the dominions of both ſtates in *Europe*, and a truce for ten years in the *Eaſt* and *Weſt-Indies*. However, on complaints being afterwards made, that ſeveral places were taken from the *Portugueſe*, after the publication of the truce, they refuſed to part with ſome of theſe; and though orders were given for delivering up others, theſe orders

orders were drawn up in ſuch a manner, that moſt of the *Dutch* Governors refuſed to comply with them.

Upon theſe unjuſtifiable proceedings, the *Portugueſe* Viceroy, and the reſt of that nation in *Braſil*, attempted to counter-act the *Dutch*, by playing upon them their own politicks. They magnified the wiſdom of the *Dutch* government, pretended to confide in the promiſes made them, and took in good part all the excuſes brought for their non-performance; by which means, they perſuaded Count *Maurice* and the Directors of the *Weſt-India* company, that the *Dutch* territories were effectually ſettled, and that they had nothing to fear in *Braſil*, either from the natives or the *Portugueſe*; but theſe arts would probably have proved abortive, if the Directors of the *Weſt-India* company had not in a manner entered into the conſpiracy themſelves.

Finding that they were now poſſeſſed of what they had ſo long ſought for, they ſent repeated orders to Count *Maurice* to take ſuch meaſures as would increaſe their revenue, and, in particular, to ſend over vaſt quantities of ſugar, and other valuable effects; with orders not to ſuffer ſuch as were indebted to the company to pay in ſmall ſums, but to diſcharge their debts at once. Count *Maurice* obſerved, that the execution of theſe orders would be attended with many inconveniencies; that a long war had been carried on, and the country but lately reduced; that moſt of thoſe who were in debt to the company, were *Portugueſe*, who

had ſettled in their territories, and had hitherto behaved well, and therefore ought to be kindly treated, and not driven to extremities: but the Directors would not attend to his arguments. They knew that *Braſil* was very rich, and could ſee no reaſon, why all that it produced ſhould not be immediately ſhipped for *Holland*.

Other things alſo gave them great uneaſineſs. Oppoſite to the *Receif*, was a commodious iſland, upon which the Count cauſed a new town to be built and well fortified, chiefly out of the ruins of the city of *Olinda*. This town, to which he gave the name of *Mauriceburgh*, ſoon growing to a very conſiderable place, he united it to the *Receif*, which was become the centre of the *Dutch* commerce, by a ſtone bridge.

Though all this was done for the benefit of the *Dutch* inhabitants, and to ſecure the Company's capital from danger, yet, as it coſt 40,000l. they could not help grudging the expence. They were, however, moſt out of humour at the fine palace Count *Maurice* built for himſelf. This magnificent edifice was erected in the moſt commodious part of the town, and in the midſt of gardens elegantly laid out, and planted with cocoas of various ſorts, citrons, lemons, pomegranates, figs and other fruit-trees. The palace was ſo contrived as to command a moſt admirable proſpect both by ſea and land: before its front was a battery of marble, riſing gradually from the river ſide, upon which were mounted ten pieces of large cannon.

cannon. Count *Maurice* had alſo a magnificent villa at ſome diſtance in the country, ſurrounded ed by fine gardens, adorned with curious fiſh-ponds, and encompaſſed with ſtrong walls; the whole being ſo diſpoſed, as to anſwer at once, the views of pleaſure, and the defence of the city, which it covered on that ſide as a fort. He alſo laid out parks and meadows, within the fortifications, which, while properly managed, produced every thing neceſſary for the ſubſiſtence of the garriſon, and were in every reſpect equally commodious and beautiful.

Thus Count *Maurice* employed thoſe treaſures which were the fruits of his many victories and extenſive conqueſts, and which a perſon of leſs generoſity would have tranſported to *Holland*, as his own private fortune. But theſe marks of public ſpirit, which ought to have extinguiſhed, nouriſhed that envy which had been conceived againſt him; and while he was labouring to extend and ſecure the Company's power in *Braſil*, the Directors of that Company in *Holland* employed themſelves in cenſuring his conduct, and in magnifying his extravagance in expending ſuch vaſt ſums, while the colony produced ſo little to the Company's ſtock. They therefore formed the deſign of recalling him, as the only means of making the colony produce ſuch a revenue, as would be proportionable to the expectations of the Company.

CHAP. V.

Count Maurice *of* Naſſau *forms a Scheme for erecting a* Dutch *Empire in* America, *equal, if not ſuperior, to that of the* Spaniards. *General* Brewer's *Expedition to* Chili, *and its Miſcarriage, occaſioned by the ill Conduct of the* Dutch, *and the Count's being recalled.*

MEAN while the Count, who was one of the beſt patriots, and moſt able politicians *Holland* ever produced, formed the ſcheme of raiſing ſuch an empire at once in *America*, as, had it been ſteadily purſued, would have defied the rage of all their enemies. He plainly ſaw, that the *Dutch* eſtabliſhment in *Braſil*, as fair and flouriſhing as it ſeemed, under his wiſe and glorious adminiſtration, would ſink to nothing, if not ſupported by new acquiſitions.

Being therefore informed, that the inhabitants of *Chili*, which lies on the back of *Braſil* on the *South Seas*, had driven out the *Spaniards*, he conceived the deſign of fixing a *Dutch* colony there, which he thought might be eaſily done, under the plauſible pretence of aſſiſting the natives againſt their late imperious Lords the *Spaniards*.

This deſign he communicated to the States-General, and ſhewed them the utility of it, by obſerving, that it would give them the poſſeſſion of a large fertile and agreeable country, abound-

ing

ing with all the neceſſaries of life, and with the richeſt gold mines in the world; that it would humble the *Spaniards*, and open a trade to the *South Seas*; and laſtly, that it would firmly cement the circle of their commerce, as the ſlaves procured by their ſettlements in *Africa*, would be taken off by that colony, and by *Braſil*.

The States approving of this propoſal, appointed Captain *Henry Brewer*, who had ſerved with reputation in the *Eaſt-Indies*, to ſail with a ſquadron of five ſhips, on board of which were 1800 men. This ſquadron weighed from the *Texel* on the 6th of *November*, 1642, and arrived at *Fernambuca* on the coaſt of *Braſil* on the 22d of *December* following; where, having conſulted with Count *Maurice* of *Naſſau*, as General and Commander in chief for the *Dutch*, in *Braſil*, he ſailed from *Fernambuca* on the 16th of *January* following, and on the 5th of *March* came in ſight of the Streights *Le Marie*, where he caſt anchor in the Bay of *Stateſland*; where having remained till the 25th, they ſailed round *Cape Horn*, and, after ſuffering much by ſtormy weather, and loſing the company of one of their ſhips, he arrived with the other four on the coaſt of *Chili*; then ſteering along the coaſt, they, on the 9th of *May*, came to an anchor in a Bay of the *South Sea*, in 41° 30′ ſouth latitude, to which they gave the name of *Brewer's Haven*.

An officer with a company of ſoldiers being ſent on ſhore, they diſcovered a great number of ſheep, oxen, and horſes, and ſome houſes; but the inhabitants were fled. They, however, ſup-

ſuppoſed part of the country to be in the poſſeſſion of the *Spaniards*, from the large wooden croſſes they ſaw fixed at the entrance of the houſes; and the next day going on ſhore, they obſerved a party of *Spaniſh* horſe, and ſome cannon-ſhot was fired at the boat.

On the 20th of *May*, a company of 50 ſoldiers being again ſent on ſhore, they diſcovered the town of *Carelmappa*, and had a ſmart engagement with a party of *Spaniards*, conſiſting of 90 men, horſe and foot, whom they defeated: when, the *Spaniards* abandoning the town, the *Dutch* took poſſeſſion of it, and remained there till the 25th, and then ſetting fire to the town, and killing the horſes they had taken in the engagement, they returned to their ſhips.

They afterwards ſteered to the town of *Caſtro*, on the iſland of *Chiloe*, where arriving on the 6th of *June*, a conſiderable body of *Spaniſh* horſe and foot appeared on the coaſt; but the *Dutch* no ſooner landed ſome ſoldiers, than the inhabitants ſet fire to the town, and abandoned it, having before carried away every thing that was valuable.

Caſtro had been adorned with many magnificent buildings, and was pleaſantly ſituated on a hill. It was ſurrounded with fruitful orchards and gardens; the fields beyond it were well cultivated, and at this time the fruit remained on many of the trees, notwithſtanding its being winter. The *Dutch* took 100 ſheep and ſome hogs off the iſland, and re-embarking on the 17th of *June*, returned to *Brewer*'s *Haven*, from whence they propoſed to ſail to the river *Baldivia*;

The Dutch defeat a Party of Spaniards.

7 AP 53

Baldivia; but the north wind blowing hard, they returned to *Carelmappa*, where landing a company of ſoldiers, they took three *Spaniards* priſoners, who informed them, that there were gold mines at *Orſorno*, and more at *Baldivia*; but that they had not been wrought of late, as the *Indians* had not been compelled to work in the mines, ſince the general revolt in 1595.

They alſo learned from an old *Spaniſh* woman, they had taken, that before the above revolt, the *Spaniards* lived in great ſplendor at *Orſorno*, the meaneſt of them having at leaſt 300 vaſſals, who were compelled to pay their reſpective Lords a certain weekly tribute in gold; but were uſed ſo cruelly by the *Spaniards*, that they aroſe as one man, and drove them from *Orſorno*, and other *Spaniſh* towns; and that the *Spaniards* poſſeſſed little more in that part of *Chili*, than *Carelmappa* and St. *Michael de Calembuco*. Since that time the *Indians* of *Orſorno*, *Baldivia*, and five other towns, had, till lately, kept up a pretty good correſpondence with the *Spaniards*, but had ſince taken up arms againſt them.

The truth of this intelligence was comfirmed by five *Indian* Caciques, who came on board, and aſſured the *Dutch*, that they were extremely glad of finding they were come to aſſiſt them againſt their ancient enemies; to which, the *Dutch* anſwered, that they had brought arms to exchange with the natives of *Orſorno*, *Baldivia*, and other places, for ſuch merchandizes as *Chili* afforded, to enable them to carry on the war againſt the *Spaniards*; and that

that they were ready to aſſiſt them to the utmoſt of their power.

To this the *Chileſe* replied, that they lived very uneaſy under the *Spaniſh* government of *Carelmappa*, and wanted to get to their friends at *Orſorno* and *Baldivia*; but the *Spaniards* had poſſeſſed all the paſſes, and the country was overflowed by the winter rains; they therefore deſired Mr. *Brewer* to take them to *Baldivia* in his ſhips. To this he readily conſented, and they returned on ſhore to give their friends an account of what had paſſed, and to make preparations for the voyage.

The next day more of the natives went on board, and one of them bringing the head of a *Spaniard* whom he had killed, they declared their reſolution to ſhake off the *Spaniſh* yoke; upon which Mr. *Brewer* made them a preſent of ſome ſpears, ſwords and muſkets, with powder and ball; in return for which, they ſent him ſome black cattle.

Thus far this expedition ſucceeded perfectly well; but Mr. *Brewer*, who alone was equal to the enterprize, dying on the 7th of *Auguſt*, Captain *Hackerman*, who ſucceeded him in the command, behaved with ſo little addreſs, that he ſoon let the natives know the motives which had induced the *Dutch* to viſit their coaſt, and created jealouſies, which he afterwards found impoſſible to remove.

The late General was ſo confident of the ſucceſs of the enterprize, that he had directed his countrymen to take his corpſe with them, and bury it at *Baldivia*, which he had intended to fortify;

fortify; and appointed the *Chileſe* to rendezvous there and meet the fleet, not doubting of a general revolt in their favour. His great ambition was, to have a tomb erected in that place, to perpetuate the memory of his being the author of ſo great a good to his country.

But, to proceed, the *Dutch*, having taken 470 *Chileſe* on board, who had furniſhed themſelves with corn, cattle, and other proviſions for the voyage, ſet ſail for the river *Baldivia* on the 21ſt of *Auguſt*, and arrived there on the 24th.

The *Dutch* having ſailed half a league up the river, obſerved three channels, and taking the middle one, had the misfortune to run a-ground, ſo that it was two or three days before they could get all their ſhips a float. On their arrival at *Baldivia*, they only found the ruins of the ancient gates, which were very high, and ſtrong built; but the place was over-run with weeds and buſhes. Here they found 3 or 400 *Chileſe* horſe and foot, arm'd with ſpears 18 feet long, ſome of whom came on board to welcome them on their arrival. Mr. *Hackerman* then harangued them by an interpreter, and informed them that the *Dutch* were now in the poſſeſſion of *Braſil*, which lay upon the ſame continent, and were in a condition to ſupply them with arms and ammunition. He promiſed to aſſiſt them in driving their enemies, the *Spaniards*, out of the country, and deſired them to enter with him into a league offenſive and defenſive. He alſo preſented them with letters from the Prince of *Orange*, to the ſame purpoſe, which were interpreted to the *Chileſe*: for as neither the people of the *Eaſt* or *Weſt*-

Weſt-Indies had any notion of a republican form of government, the *Dutch* conſtantly in all their negotiations with thoſe diſtant nations, pretended to be authorized by the Prince of *Orange*, or ſome ſingle perſons, whom they inſinuated was their Monarch.

The Caciques replied, that they would conſult their brethren of *Orſorno* and *Coneo*, and then return to *Baldivia*; upon which the *Dutch* proceeded to land their ſoldiers, and the Commander took a view of the ground, in order to erect a fort. The ſame evening above 1000 *Chileſe* arrived from *Orſorno* and *Coneo* to treat with the *Dutch*; and the next day Mr. *Hackerman* by his interpreter, made them another ſpeech, in which he told them, that the chief motive of his voyage was to aſſiſt the *Chileſe*, the fame of whoſe actions had reached as far as *Holland*; that the *Dutch* had been at war with the *Spaniards* for upwards of fourſcore years, like them, for the recovery of their liberties, which they had at laſt obtained; and that, if the *Chileſe* would enter into a confederacy with them, they were ready to ſupply them with cannon, ſmall arms and ammunition, which they would exchange for the produce of the country. To this, the Caciques replied, that they were happy in meeting with a ſupply of arms, from ſo diſtant a country as *Holland*, and that they would conſider of what was propoſed.

The *Dutch* then aſked, if they could ſupply them with proviſions, upon which they readily promiſed to bring them plenty of corn and cattle. After this they entered into a verbal alliance offenſive

ſive and defenſive againſt the Spaniards; but the *Chileſe* abſolutely refuſed to execute ſome written articles, that were interpreted to them, alledging, that this was not cuſtomary with them, and that they always conſidered promiſes as ſacred.

The *Dutch* then proceeded to build a fort at *Baldivia*; but when they propoſed to exchange arms witn the natives for their gold, the Caciques appeared alarmed, and jealous of their new allies, declaring that they had no gold mines, and that there was no ſuch thing as gold in uſe among them; that they indeed remembered, that formerly they had been obliged to pay heavy taxes to the *Spaniards* in gold, on pain of loſing their ears and noſes, as many of them actually did, who could not procure as much as was expected; and this had given them ſuch an abhorrence of that metal, that they could not bear to hear it named; that they were far from valuing it, as they found all ſtrangers did, to whom it was the cauſe of many miſchiefs from which they were free.

To this the *Dutch* Commander replied, that he was not come to exact any thing of them, as the *Spaniards* had done, but was ready to pay them for their gold with arms, or whatever merchandize they liked beſt. At this, the Caciques immediately penetrating into his views, ſtared at each other, without returning one word of anſwer. Upon this, he did not think fit to urge them any farther, tho' he was ſenſible that there were very rich mines in that part of the country. He perceived that they

were deeply alarmed, and filled with the ſuſpicion, that the *Dutch*, for the ſake of their gold, would treat them in the ſame manner as the *Spaniards* had done. And therefore Mr. *Hackerman* being ſenſible that he could not now expect much aſſiſtance from the natives, and that it would be impoſſible for him to maintain his ground, he diſpatched a letter to *Fernambuca*, by one of his Captains, whom he ſent with two of his ſhips, ſending an account of the ſtate of his affairs, and deſiring a reinforcement. In the mean time, he continued to fortify the poſt he had taken at *Baldivia*, where he hoped to defend himſelf, till the arrival of theſe ſupplies.

This expreſs had not been diſpatched a week, before the *Dutch* Commander became ſenſible of his miſtake, and that whatever miſunderſtanding there might be between the *Chileſe* and the *Spaniards*, the former were as much afraid of the *Dutch*, as of their ancient enemies, and would probably join with the *Spaniards* to expel them out of the country; for at his next conference with the Caciques they let him know, that he muſt expect no proviſions from them; and even endeavoured to terrify him, by reporting that the *Spaniards* were aſſembling their forces by ſea and land, to drive the *Dutch* from *Baldivia*. Soon after which he demoliſhed his new erected fortification, and having re-imbarked his people, ſet ſail for *Braſil* on the 28th of *October* 1643; he doubled *Cape Horn*, and, after being only two months in the voyage, arrived, on the 28th of *December*, at *Fernambuca* in *Braſil*.

In the mean time, the *Dutch Weſt-India* company

pany had carried their parſimonious ſcheme into execution, and the Count being as weary of their management, as they were of his, he, on the 11th of *May*, 1644, quitted the government, which he had held eight years, and being gone when the above fleet returned to *Braſil*, thoſe on board were no longer at a loſs for the reaſon of their not being ſupported in time, as with great juſtice they expected, and as the importance of the enterprize deſerved.

CHAP. VI.

The Dutch Weſt-India *Company being now reſolved to proceed in the moſt frugal Manner, ſtrip the Country of the Troops employed in its Defence; and ſend new Governors, who leſſen the Expences of the Company, and encreaſe their immediate Profits; but neglect the Fortifications, and oppreſs the* Portugueſe *under their Subjection; upon which they take up Arms for the Recovery of their Liberties, and, after a long War, drive out the* Dutch.

THE Count returned to *Europe* with a fleet of thirteen large ſhips, and near 3000 ſoldiers on board, and, agreeable to the inſtructions he had received, and to the new ſcheme of frugal government, he left only eighteen companies for the defence of the *Dutch* ſettlements.

The illuſtrious perſons who were the ſucceſſors of the great Count *Maurice* of *Naſſau*, one of the ableſt, braveſt, and moſt worthy

men of that family, ſo famous for producing heroes, were chiefly Mr. *Hamel*, a merchant of *Amſterdam*, Mr. *de Baſis*, a goldſmith of *Haerlem*, and Mr. *Bulleſtraat*, a carpenter of *Middleburgh*; men of good ſenſe, and great fidelity to the Company; but they had narrow minds, and not the leaſt idea of the art of government. They forced the *Portugueſe* who lived under them, to pay what they owed the Company in a ſhort time, by ſuch methods as made them loſe their hearts for ever. They ſent to *Holland* the produce of the very lands Count *Maurice* had aſſigned for maintaining the fortifications, which they ſuffered to run to ruin. They granted licences upon very eaſy terms to the ſoldiers to return home; which leſſened the expence of the army, and the very next year ſent a greater quantity of ſugar to *Holland*, than had ever been ſent in one year before; but all theſe applauded meaſures tended ſolely to the deſtruction of the ſettlement, and to deprive the *Dutch* of this invaluable acquiſition.

Don *Antonio Tellez de Silva*, who was at this time the *Portugueſe* Viceroy, was a man of the greateſt wiſdom and abilities, and at the ſame time had every other qualification of a good Governor. This gentleman was no ſooner informed that Count *Maurice* had carried with him two thirds of the force of *Braſil*, than he inſinuated to the *Portugueſe* ſubject to the *Dutch*, that they were only labouring for ſtrangers, while they might be maſters of all they now farmed at an exhorbitant rent, if their King was but reſtored to his juſt rights. Theſe

ſuggeſtions

ſuggeſtions had great weight; but the whole affair, of recovering *Braſil*, was undertaken by *Juan Fernandez Viera*, a very extraordinary perſon, who was originally a butcher's boy, and was afterwards page to one of the Magiſtrates of *Olinda*, while it was in the poſſeſſion of the *Portugueſe*. He afterwards became a kind of factor to the *Dutch*, had four ſugar plantations of his own, beſides being intruſted with the management of many more, and, by his induſtry and art, he grew extremely rich.

This perſon having laid the ſcheme of the conſpiracy, ſent it over to *Portugal* by one who was ignorant of the deſign; after which, he ſent a relation of his to court, with a letter recommending him to the King, who granted him a troop of horſe: upon which he acted there as Agent for the conſpirators.

As *Viera* foreſaw, that this would reach the ears of the *Dutch*, he went directly to the Council, owned what he had done, and offered to give ſecurity for his good behaviour; when two of the richeſt *Portugueſe* in the *Dutch* territories, who were as deep in the conſpiracy as himſelf, became bound for him. For as he owed the chief perſons in the adminiſtration upwards of 200,000 florins, they thought it adviſeable not to ruin him; and by this contrivance he effectually ſecured his liberty, that he might be able to carry on his great deſign, in which he was aſſiſted by *Antonio Cavalcante* and *Amador Aragouſa*, who were equally deep in the management of the *Dutch* affairs, and determined, like him, to contribute all in

their power to the ruin of thoſe who truſted them.

This plot was propoſed to be put in execution on the 24th of *June*, 1645, when one of *Antonio Cavalcante*'s daughters was to be married, and a great entertainment given at *Viera*'s houſe, to which moſt of the officers and principal perſons in the Company's ſervice were invited, where they would doubtleſs have been ſeized, if not murdered, if the deſign had not been diſcovered the very evening before it was to have been executed; but, at this inſtant a ſhip arriving from *Amſterdam*, brought letters from the Directors of the *Weſt-India* company, containing an account that the Miniſter from the States-General at the court of *Portugal*, had diſcovered that a great conſpiracy was carrying on in *Braſil*, and that they would do well to inquire what ſupplies had been lately ſent from *Liſbon* to the *Portugueſe* in that country. This inquiry produced ſuch diſcoveries, as filled the *Dutch* with a conſternation that gave *Viera* and his aſſociates time to eſcape into the neighbouring woods, where they immediately took up arms.

Viera now aſſumed the character of General and Commander in Chief, and being aſſiſted by Colonel *Diaz* with a few *Portugueſe* troops, and Colonel *Cameron* at the head of a numerous body of *Braſilians*, he fixed his head-quarters at *Pojug*, a town between the *Receif* and Cape *St. Auguſtine*; ſo that, to the misfortune of the *Dutch*, this unexpected war broke out in the very heart of their dominions. *Antonio Cavalcante* at the

ſame

ſame time raiſed another part of the country; and *Amador Aragouſa*, at the head of a flying party, was employed in burning and deſtroying all the *Dutch* plantations without mercy.

The Council ſeeing themſelves in this dreadful ſituation, aſſembled all the troops they were able, and publiſhed a proclamation, promiſing to pardon all who would ſubmit and return to their duty, except *Viera*, *Cavalcante*, and *Aragouſa*. They gave the command of a few ill-provided troops they got together, to Colonel *Huys*, to whom they gave the title of General, and, in ſhort, ſent two Captains to the Viceroy at the Bay of *All Saints*, to complain of this infraction of the truce, which had ſtill four years to come.

The Viceroy received theſe Captains with great civility, and anſwered with much prudence, that he was anſwerable for the conduct of the inhabitants of the part of *Braſil* ſubject to the crown of *Portugal*; and if they had broke the truce, he would have given the *Dutch* what ſatisfaction they could deſire; but if the *Portugueſe* ſettled in the *Dutch* dominions, had been induced by oppreſſion, to take up arms, he could not help it, and it was very unjuſt to blame him for it.

This was the anſwer he gave in public; but in a private converſation with Capt. *Hoogſtrate*, one of the gentlemen ſent on this negociation, he not only drew him over to his intereſt, but prevailed on him to deliver up the important poſt of *St. Auguſtine*, of which he was Governor.

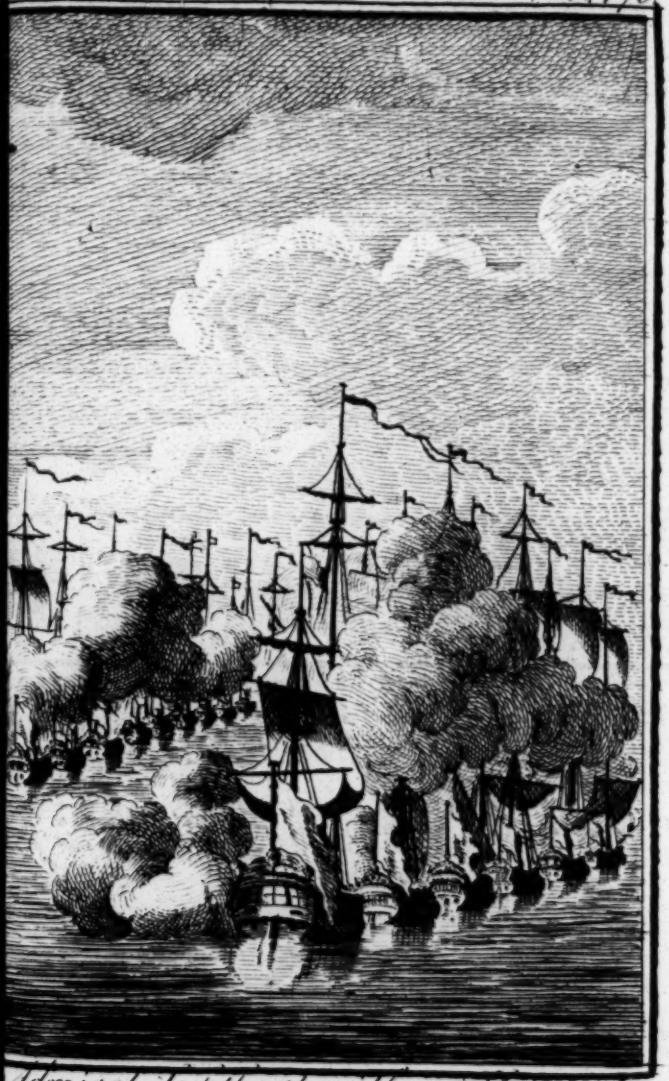
In

In the mean time General *Huys* attacking Col. *Cameron*, had the misfortune to be defeated with the loſs of 100 men. Soon after the *Portugueſe* Admiral *Salvador Correa de Bonavides* appeared with a numerous fleet on the coaſt; upon which Admiral *Lichthart*, though he had but five men of war, offered him battle; but this the *Portugueſe* Commander refuſed, under the pretence of his having no orders to act againſt the *Dutch*, and that he was only to land a body of men in his maſter's dominions; which he had no ſooner done, than thoſe men, without ceremony, entered the *Dutch* territories, and made themſelves maſters of all the places that fell in their way. Upon this the Council ſent orders to General *Huys* to make a retreat; but he ſtaying for an officer whom he had ſent to bring ſeveral ladies and rich effects out of the country, had the misfortune to be ſurrounded by the *Portugueſe*, who, after beating him, took him and his men priſoners.

Orders were now ſent to Admiral *Lichthart* to attack the *Portugueſe* ſhips whenever he had an opportunity, and upon this occaſion, he gave a freſh proof of his courage and admirable conduct; for with four ſhips, a frigate and a bark, he attacked a *Portugueſe* fleet of 17 ſail, took three of the largeſt ſhips, together with the Admiral, burnt and ſunk almoſt all the reſt, and killed 700 men.

This ſucceſs began to revive the hopes of the Council, when they received the unexpected news, that *Hoogſtrate* had treacherouſly delivered up the poſt of *St. Auguſtin.*

For



Admiral Lichthart with 4 Ships a Frigate and a Bark attacks the Portuguez Fleet of 17 Sail.

For this baſe action he received the ſum of 18,000 florins, which he employed in raiſing a regiment of 650 *Braſilians*, of whom he was made Colonel by the *Portugueſe*, and appearing at the head of this body againſt his countrymen, behaved with reſolution and fidelity in the ſervice of *Portugal*.

The great ſuperiority of the *Portugueſe*, now enabled them to make quick diſpatch in moſt of their expeditions, and in a little time they became maſters of almoſt all the ſtrong places in the Captainſhip of *Fernambuca*. At length, they blocked up the *Receif*, the only ſtrong place the *Dutch* had left.

When the news of theſe proceedings reached *Holland*, the people were extremely irritated, and tho' the *Portugueſe* Ambaſſador endeavoured to perſuade the States-General, that his Moſt Faithful Majeſty had no concern in what had happened at *Braſil*, the *Dutch* fitted out a fleet of 52 men of war, under the command of M. *Blankert*, Admiral of *Zealand*, who was declared Admiral of *Braſil*, *Guinea*, and *Angola*; and with him they ſent Colonel *Schuppen* and Colonel *Henderſon*, who had acquired great reputation in the ſervice of Count *Maurice*. Thus was an open war begun between *Holland* and *Portugal*.

But hardly any fleet ever met with ſo many unfortunate accidents, and ſo many delays; for within two days after they ſailed from the *Texel*, they were forced to anchor in the *Downs*, where they loſt two ſhips in a ſtorm; they ſailed again, and were forced into the *Iſle of Wight*, where the firſt ſight they ſaw was the wreck of a large

a large *Dutch* merchantman from *Braſil*, with a cargo of immenſe value, which was entirely loſt, and out of 300 perſons, only 30 ſaved: in the port of *St. Helen*'s they remained windbound ſeven weeks, and at laſt met with a ſtorm, on their putting again to ſea, by which they ſuffered extremely. By theſe and many other accidents, they were ſo long delayed, that they did not arrive at the *Recief*, till the garriſon was reduced to the utmoſt extremity, and was on the point of ſurrendering. However, by the help of theſe reinforcements, the war was ſtill continued, and ſome ſmall advantages obtained.

But in the beginning of the year 1647, the *Portugueſe* again blocked up the *Receif*, where the whole force of the *Dutch* conſiſted of only 1800 men, who, however, made a gallant defence; but, at length, ſallying out with all their ſtrength to attack the enemy in the field, they were overpowered by numbers, and intirely defeated with the loſs of 1100 ſoldiers, moſt of their officers, and all the artillery and ammunition they had carried with them. This hindered them from making any more ſallies; but at the ſame time enabled them to make a longer defence, as they had now proviſions for ſeven months, which would otherwiſe have laſted but three.

The progreſs of the *Portugueſe* became now ſo great, that nothing ſeemed capable of preventing the intire ruin of the *Dutch* affairs in that part of the world. This produced a kind of national deſpair, which haſtened the ruin, that

that was but too plainly foreſeen. The Province of *Zealand* recalled Admiral *Blankert*, with whom came moſt of the officers they had ſent with him. The difficulties they had met with in their paſſage thither, were repeated on their return; ſo that the Admiral died before the fleet arrived in *Holland*, as did ſeveral of his officers almoſt as ſoon as they came on ſhore: but the Sieur *Shuk*, who had been ſent by the Governors of *Braſil*, ſurviving, gave the States ſuch an affecting account of the poſture of affairs in that country, that they reſolved to make a great effort for the preſervation of ſo valuable an acquiſition, and gave orders for fitting out a fleet of 50 large men of war, and for embarking 6000 regular troops, the command of which was given to Admiral *Witte-Wittezen*, who was then eſteemed the ableſt officer in the *Dutch* ſervice, and it was alſo reſolved to ſend after him an additional ſupply of between 5 or 6000 men more. The Admiral ſailed towards the end of the year 1650, and after ſuffering much by ſtorms and tempeſts in the paſſage, at length arrived on the coaſt of *Fernambuca*; but inſtead of a Colony, the Admiral found a mere hoſpital of ſick, maimed, and infirm people; and inſtead of thoſe fortreſſes which he was to have relieved, church-yards, filled with the bodies of thoſe who had before been ſent on the ſame errand. For the *Portugueſe*, *Braſilians*, and Negroes living on the natural produce of the country, were healthy and ſtrong; while the *Dutch*, pent up in their forts, were obliged to ſubſiſt intirely

intirely on the proviſions ſent them from *Europe*; by which means they grew pale, wan and feeble, and died in great numbers. The affecting ſights the Admiral ſaw there, made him reſolve, notwithſtanding the orders he had received, to return home without delay; this he accordingly did, leaving things in a much worſe condition than he found them; for which he was afterwards called to an account by the States, though he ſoon juſtified himſelf to their ſatisfaction.

In ſhort, the *Dutch* ſtill continued to meet with ill ſucceſs, and towards the concluſion of the year 1653, the *Portugueſe*, who now publicly aſſiſted *Viera*, ſent a fleet of ſixteen large men of war to attack the *Recief* by ſea, and to blow up part of its fortifications; which ſo terrified the garriſon that they abſolutely refuſed to fight. The next year, the *Dutch* ſurrendered every thing they poſſeſſed in *Braſil*, and in 1655 they returned to *Holland*.

It is impoſſible to conceive the uproar that this raiſed in the country, or the heat and fury with which the people demanded juſtice againſt General *Sigiſmund Schuppen*, who had commanded in chief for many years, and was Governor of the *Receif* when it ſurrendered. The States, to ſecure him and his officers from their reſentment, ſent them to priſon, and granted the only favour he aſked, which was his being allowed to make a public defence. In this, he ſo clearly laid open his own long and faithful ſervices, recapitulated all the ſucceſſes they had under the adminiſtration of Count *Maurice*, and

and gave ſo true and affecting a picture of the miſeries, and misfortunes he himſelf and his men had ſuffered ſince he went laſt thither, that the people wept and his judges acquitted him.

To conclude this ſubject: when Count *Maurice*, after reſiding eight years in *Braſil*, quitted the government, he left them ſeven Captainſhips, one city, thirty great towns, forty-five regular fortreſſes, ninety ſail of good ſhips, 3000 regular troops, 20,000 *Dutch* of all ages and ſexes, 60,000 Negroes, and above twice as many *Braſilians*. At that time the colony annually yielded 25,000 cheſts of ſugar; and a carpenter, cooper, or ſmith could earn five or ſix guilders a day, and live very comfortably upon one. But the above avaricious and parſimonious management, occaſioned not only the loſs of this invaluable colony; but the expending of millions upon it, for ten years together; and after the deſtruction of ſeveral thouſands from time to time ſent thither, there returned to *Holland* in 1655, no more than between ſix and ſeven hundred perſons, none of whom were worth a groat.

CHAP. VII.

A Description of the present State of the several Captainships or Provinces of Brasil, *and their Produce; the Manner of making clayed Sugar, and an Account of the* Brasil *Tree; the principal Cities and Towns of each Province, and the Discovery of Gold and Diamonds in that Country.*

SINCE this time the *Portugueſe* have remained in the quiet poſſeſſion of all this vaſt country; but ſuffer no ſhips to trade thither beſides their own. The whole trade of the five northern Captainſhips, *Paria*, *Maragnan*, *Siara*, *Rio Grande*, and *Paraiba*, are carried on at the laſt mentioned port, which is ſituated on a river of the ſame name, at about five leagues diſtance from the ſea. *Paraiba* is a fine populous town, and ſeven or eight ſhips of 250 tons burden each, are annually ſent thither from *Liſbon* and *Oporto*. Their lading chiefly conſiſts of ſugar, more of which has been cultivated in the northern Captainſhips than in the ſouth, eſpecially ſince the diſcovery of the gold mines, which have rendered the ſouthern inhabitants more negligent about the improvement of their lands.

The ſugar of *Braſil* was the firſt ſent to *Europe*, the *Portugueſe* having ſet up their works in this country about the year 1580. Their trade in this commodity ſoon became extremely

great

great, and their being ſo long in poſſeſſion of it, has made them more careful in the management of ſugar, than any other nation; and even at this time the clayed ſugars of *Braſil*, are finer and whiter than ours; though the manner of preparing it is extremely eaſy.

When their ſugar is put into pots, and is ſunk two or three inches below the brim by draining out the melaſſes, they ſcrape off a thin hard cruſt that is found on the top of the ſugar, and then pour in their mixture for refining it, which is nothing more than a fine ſoft white clay, beat and mixed with water, till it is of the conſiſtence of cream; with this they fill up the pot or pan, and in ten or twelve days, the white water paſſes quite through, whitening all the ſugar, while the thick body of the clay lodges at top, and is eaſily taken off with a knife.

They alſo bring from *Paraiba*, notwithſtanding its being the leaſt frequented port in *Braſil*, dying woods, ſeveral ſorts of drugs, and other valuable commodities, and it is generally allowed that theſe northern Captainſhips are the beſt peopled, and the inhabitants in very eaſy circumſtances, though no mines have yet been wrought in theſe parts.

Next to *Paraiba* is *Tamaraca*, the trade whereof is carried on at the city of *Olinda*, which was rebuilt by the *Portugueſe*, after its being demoliſhed by Count *Maurice*. It is ſeated on the ſide of a hill near the ſea, but this ſituation renders the ſtreets very uneven and incommodious. The port is alſo narrow, and

the entrance into it extremely difficult, yet ſhips continually reſort thither from the other parts of *Braſil* and the *Canaries*, as well as the annual fleet from *Liſbon*, which generally conſiſts of about thirty ſail, eſcorted by a man of war. Theſe ſhips are chiefly loaded here with ſugar and *Braſil* wood, which laſt is ſuppoſed to be the beſt of its kind in the world.

Of this wood there are different ſorts; as the *Braſil* of *Japan*, that of *Lamon*, that of St. *Martha*, and *Braziletto* from *Jamaica* and the *Leeward Iſlands*; but the very beſt is produced in this country, and the beſt there is at *Fernambuca*.

The *Braſil* tree generally grows in dry barren places, and among rocks; it is thick and large, and the timber is uſually crooked and knotty. It bears flowers of a moſt beautiful bright red, that have a very fragrant ſmell, which, inſtead of hurting, ſtrengthens and cheriſhes the brain. Though the tree is very large, it is covered with ſo thick a bark that when the *Braſilians* have taken it off, a tree as bulky as a man's body is left no thicker than the calf of his leg. The wood is very hard, dry, and heavy; it crackles much in the fire, and ſcarce raiſes any ſmoke. That is eſteemed the beſt which is the ſoundeſt, thickeſt, and hardeſt. It ought alſo upon ſplitting to turn from a pale to a deep red, and upon chewing the chips, the beſt ſort yields a ſweet taſte, ſomewhat like ſugar. This wood is put to various uſes by the turners, and takes a very good poliſh: but it is principally uſed in dying, in which it yields a very fine bright red.

The

The next Captainſhip is that called by the *Portugueſe* the Bay of *Bahia*, or the Bay of *All Saints*: it is about twelve leagues over, but in ſeveral places is ſcarce navigable on account of the ſand banks and ſhoals. In this bay there are ſeveral ſmall iſlands, on which the *Portugueſe* have tobacco and ſugar plantations, and they have alſo very good fiſheries on the coaſt of theſe iſlands, and on the banks. At the entrance of the bay is the city of St. *Salvador*, which lies in 14° ſouth latitude, and is at preſent the centre of the *Portugueſe* trade in this part of the world. It has a very fine port, which might be rendered ſtill more commodious if art and induſtry gave a little aſſiſtance to nature.

The city of St. *Salvador*, which is at preſent the ſeat of an Archbiſhop, is divided into the Upper and Lower. The upper town is ſeated on the ſummit of a mountain. The houſes are large and pretty convenient, but the inequality of the ground on which they ſtand, renders the ſtreets very diſagreeable. In the middle of the town is the great ſquare, the four ſides of which are taken up with the Viceroy's palace, the town-houſe, the mint, and other public buildings, built of ſtone brought from *Portugal*. The Jeſuits College is by far the largeſt and fineſt edifice in the city, particularly the Sacriſty, which is lined throughout with the moſt beautiful tortoiſe ſhell, wrought and fixed together in the moſt elegant manner, ſo that nothing can be conceived more agreeable to the eye. There are ſeveral very fine churches, as that of the *Benedictine-Abbey*, which rivals

that lately poſſeſſed by the Jeſuits; but the cathedral, which, at a diſtance, ſeems the nobleſt ſtructure, upon being nearly examined, appears neither neat nor regular. However, in richneſs of gilding, it ſurpaſſes all the other churches. Among the convents in this capital, is a remarkable one of the order of St. *Clare*, and another for ſuch young girls as are expoſed and abandoned by their parents. It is ſurprizing to ſee how theſe foundlings are conſidered in this country; the King adops them all, and the ladies of the firſt quality frequently take them home, when at a proper age, and breed them up as their own.

The lower town, wherein all the merchants and people of buſineſs reſide, is ſituated at the foot of the hill, which is exceſſively ſteep, though not very high, and is a place of the greateſt hurry and trade. There are here a Royal Arſenal, the King's warehouſes and magazines, which are large, well filled, and kept in excellent order. There is alſo a fine yard for building of ſhips, which is of conſiderable advantage. Theſe ſhips are not only built at an eaſier rate, but are more ſerviceable than others, the timber being excellent in its kind, from its having the peculiar advantage of the worms being unable to penetrate it.

With reſpect to the fortifications of the city, there is a large ſquare fort, and below it a ſmaller, with ten large pieces of cannon. Theſe two fortreſſes command the mouth of the bay. They have a new fort called St. *Peter*'s *Caſtle*, which is alſo very ſtrong; and

in the middle of the harbour is a large fortreſs. At the point of *Montſerat* they have a ſmall but ſtrong fort with twelve pieces of heavy cannon. Between *Montſerat* and the city is a fine citadel, which is a regular ſquare admirably fortified, and well furniſhed with braſs cannon, and the Arſenal is flanked by two ſtrong baſtions that command the whole fort. There are yet two other fortreſſes to be mentioned; one between St. *Antonio* and the city, where they make their gun-powder; and the other the powder houſe, which lies on the other ſide of the city, and commands a large artificial lake, made by the *Dutch*, by which the city of St. *Salvador* is covered on one ſide, as it is by the ſea on the other.

The fleet, ſent annually hither from *Liſbon*, conſiſts of about 30 ſhips, eſcorted by two men of war, which uſually ſail about *March*, and in this bay the whole *Braſil* fleet generally aſſemble, in order to return together to *Europe*. From this port they bring home gold, amethyſts, diamonds, and the beſt tobacco in *Braſil*, which is much eſteemed; indigo, ſugar, balſam of capivi, ipecacuanha, pereira brava, cinnamon, long pepper, ginger, woods for dying, and ſome for inlaying, ambergris, and other rich drugs and perfumes. They alſo export raw hides, train oil, and whale-fins.

All the reſt of the Captainſhips lie farther to the ſouth, and carry on their trade by the *Rio Janeiro*, ſo called from its being diſcovered in *January*, 1550, and is at preſent one of the moſt conſiderable rivers in the world. Its banks

are

are as beautiful as can be imagined, the climate is fine, and the ſoil is extremely fertile, producing ſugar, indigo, tobacco and cotton, in very great perfection, and *European* corn has been found to grow there with very little trouble. But this, and all other improvements have been diſcouraged on account of the gold mines that have been diſcovered in this and the neighbouring Captainſhips of St. *Vincent*; though independantly of theſe mines, this may be conſidered as the richeſt part of *Braſil*. The *Portugueſe* ſettled here, are very different in their manners from thoſe in the Bay of *All Saints*, for they are active and induſtrious, and ſuffer the *Indians* who live among them to enjoy as much freedom as themſelves.

The city of St. *Sebaſtian*, the capital of this country, is very commodiouſly ſituated on the weſt ſide of the river about two leagues from the ſea, and in 23° ſouth lattitude. This city, which is very well fortified, is the ſeat of a *Portugueſe* Governor, and is a Biſhop's ſee, ſuffragan to the Archbiſhop of St. *Salvador*.

There are alſo ſeveral other conſiderable towns on the *Rio Janeiro*, all of which carry on a conſiderable trade, as appears from the number of ſhips annually ſent thither from *Portugal*. Theſe conſiſt of between 20 and 30 veſſels of 500 tons each, uſually eſcorted by two men of war. The commodities brought from thence are generally the ſame as thoſe exported from St. *Salvador*; beſides theſe, gold and diamonds are found in this province.

With

With reſpect to the gold and diamonds of *Braſil*, minerals, which mankind hold in the greateſt eſteem, and exert their utmoſt art and induſtry in acquiring; the former was firſt found in the mountains near the city of *Rio Janeiro*. The manner, however, in which this diſcovery was made, is differently related; but the moſt common account is, that the *Indians* on the back of the *Portugueſe* ſettlements were obſerved to make uſe of this metal for their fiſh-hooks; and enquiry being made of their manner of procuring it, it appeared that conſiderable quantities of it were annually waſhed from the mountains, and left among the gravel and ſand that remained in the valleys, after the running off, or evaporation of the water.

This diſcovery being made, conſiderable quantities of gold were imported from *Braſil* to *Europe*, and the annual imports have been continually augmented by the diſcovery of places in other provinces, where it is to be found in as great plenty as at firſt about *Rio Janeiro*; and it is even ſaid, that a ſlender vein of this metal runs through the whole country at about twenty-four feet from the ſurface, but is too thin and poor to anſwer the expence of digging. However, gold is always to be collected when the rivers or rains have had any courſe for a conſiderable time, and therefore the being able to divert a ſtream from its channel, is eſteemed an infallible ſource of gain.

The employment of ſearching the bottoms of rivers and torrents, and waſhing the gold from the dirt and ſand, is principally performed by ſlaves,

ſlaves, who are chiefly Negroes, of whom the *Portugueſe* have great numbers kept for that purpoſe. By a very ſingular regulation, each of theſe ſlaves are obliged to furniſh their maſter every day with the eighth part of an ounce of gold; and if by their induſtry or good fortune, they collect a larger quantity, the ſurplus is conſidered as their own property, and they are allowed to diſpoſe of it as they think fit; by which means ſome Negroes, who have fallen upon rich waſhing places, have, it is ſaid, purchaſed ſlaves of their own, and lived in great ſplendor. Their original maſter having no other demand upon them than the daily ſupply of an eighth of an ounce, which amounts to about nine ſhillings ſterling; the *Portugueſe* ounce being ſomewhat lighter than our troy ounce.

The annual return of gold to *Liſbon* may be computed from the amount of the King's fifth, which, one year with another, is eſtimated at 150 arroves of 32 pounds *Portugueſe* weight each, which at 4l. the troy ounce, is near 300,000l. ſterling; and therefore the capital, whereof this is the fifth, is about a million and a half ſterling. To which if we add the gold exchanged with the *Spaniards* for ſilver, and what is privately brought to *Europe*, without paying the duty, which may amount to half a million more, the annual produce of the *Braſilian* gold muſt be about two millions ſterling. An immenſe ſum to be found in a country that a few years ago was not known to produce a ſingle grain.

It

It is but about thirty years ſince the firſt diamonds were brought from this country into *Europe*. Theſe valuable ſtones are, like the gold, found in the beds of rivers and torrents; but not ſo univerſally. They were frequently perceived in waſhing the gold, before they were known to be of any value, and were conſequently thrown away with the ſand and gravel; and numbers of large ſtones, that would have enriched the poſſeſſors, have paſſed unregarded, through the hands of ſeveral perſons now living. However, at length, a perſon acquainted with the appearance of rough diamonds, imagined that theſe pebbles were of the ſame kind; but it was difficult to perſuade the inhabitants that what they had been ſo long accuſtomed to deſpiſe could be of ſuch immenſe value; and in this interval, it is ſaid that a Governor procured a conſiderable number of theſe ſtones, under the pretence of uſing them as counters to play at cards. But the moſt ſkilful jewellers in *Europe* being conſulted, they declared, that theſe ſtones were true diamonds, and that many of them were not inferior, either in luſtre, or any other quality, to thoſe of the *Eaſt-Indies*. Upon this, many of the *Portugueſe* in the neighbourhood of the places where they had been firſt obſerved, began to ſearch for them with great aſſiduity, and as large rocks of cryſtal were found in ſeveral of the mountains, where the ſtream flowed, which waſhed down the diamonds, they flattered themſelves with the hopes of diſcovering diamonds of a prodigious bulk. But the King of

Portugal

Portugal being told, that this would debaſe their value, ruin the *Europeans*, who had in their poſſeſſion a great quantity of *Indian* diamonds, and render the diſcovery of no importance, his Majeſty thought proper to reſtrain the ſearch after them; for which purpoſe he erected a diamond company with an excluſive charter, which, in conſideration of a ſum annually paid to the King, has the property of all the diamonds found in *Braſil*; but to prevent their reducing their value by collecting too large quantities of them, they are not allowed to employ above 800 ſlaves in ſearching for theſe jewels. To prevent interlopers in this trade, a large town in the neighbourhood of the place where the diamonds are found, and a conſiderable diſtrict round it, have been depopulated, and the inhabitants removed to another part of the country.

Southward from the Captainſhip of *Rio Janeiro* lies the Captainſhip of St. *Vincent*, which is ſuppoſed to be the richeſt country in *Braſil*, and perhaps in all *South-America*. It is bounded on the north by the Captainſhip of *Rio Janeiro*; on the eaſt, by the ocean; on the ſouth, by the new Captainſhip, or that ſtiled *Del Rey*; and on the weſt, by the mountain of *La Plata*, and the countries inhabited by various ſavage nations, extending from 22° to 27° ſouth latitude. It is in length, from north to ſouth, about 300 miles, and in breadth from eaſt to weſt, in ſome places, near 180; though, for the greateſt part, it is not above half that breadth.

The

The town of *St. Vincent* is ſituated in a very fine bay of the *Atlantic* ocean, and is well fortified. A little to the north-weſt lies the town of *Santos*, which ſome conſider as the capital of the province, and it has as fine a port as any in the *Weſt-Indies*, it being capable of holding the largeſt ſhips, and of being fortified in ſuch a manner as to be able to reſiſt any force that could be brought againſt it.

The only Captainſhip to the ſouthward of that of *St. Vincent*, is *Del Rey*, which extends from 28 to 34° 30′ ſouth latitude, and is about 400 miles in length, but not above 100 broad in any part of it. Though this country is pleaſant and fertile, it was entirely neglected by the *Portugueſe*, till the diſcovery of the mines of *St. Vincent* put them upon planting it, and erecting ſeveral forts on the north ſide of the river *La Plata*. But though this country is as capable of improvement as any in *Braſil*, yet, as it has not been ſo long inhabited as the other Captainſhips, it is far from being thoroughly peopled, and there are only a few villages upon the ſea-coaſt, and ſome fortreſſes on the river *La Plata*.

The chief advantage drawn from this province by the *Portugueſe* is a kind of ſmuggling trade carried on with the *Spaniards*, whom they furniſh with rum and tobacco of their own growth, and with cloaths, ſilks, linens, and brandy from *Europe*.

CHAP. VIII.

An Account of a People in Braſil *called* Pauliſts, *with a Deſcription of the Manners of the Inhabitants in general.*

THE important diſcoveries mentioned in the laſt chapter, occaſioned new laws, new governments, and new regulations to be eſtabliſhed in many parts of the country; which renders it neceſſary for us here to go back a little, in order to take notice of a ſet of people named *Pauliſts*, who had erected themſelves into an independant ſtate, and whom it ſoon became proper to reduce.

It being ſuggeſted to the *Portugueſe* miniſtry, about the year 1685, that the climate at the Bay of *All Saints* would fruſtrate whatever endeavours might be uſed to render the people active and induſtrious, and that a ſettlement at the northern and ſouthern extremities of *Braſil* would render the country of much greater advantage to the crown of *Portugal*, than it had hitherto been; this occaſioned, on the one hand, the eſtabliſhment of forts and ſettlements towards the river of the *Amazons*, and on the other, the improvement of a new colony at *Santos*, which was then but ſmall.

Moſt of the perſons made choice of for this purpoſe, were *Meſtizes*, the offspring of ſuch of

of the *Portugueſe* as had married *Braſilian* women; and the perſons entruſted with the government of theſe new planters, were Prieſts and Monks; but they were ſent expreſly from *Portugal*, and care was taken that they ſhould be fit for the purpoſe. The Captain General of *Braſil*, and all the officers in the ſouthern Captainſhips, had orders to treat theſe people kindly, and to give them no diſturbance.

It ſoon appeared that this plan was wiſely concerted; for the people multiplied prodigiouſly, and ſoon became in very eaſy circumſtances. This drew a number of adventurers thither, among whom were *Spaniards* as well as *Portugueſe*, free Negroes, Mulattoes, and all the different mixtures that are to be met with in *Braſil* down to the *Carabocas*, who are the offſpring of *Braſilian* ſavages by Negroe women; there were alſo Monks as well as laymen, ſoldiers, mechanics, broken planters, and, in ſhort, all thoſe ſort of men who are ready to go any where, or to do any thing to get a living.

As theſe were a very different ſort of men from thoſe of the new colony, it was impoſſible for them to dwell together; for the former were the quieteſt and moſt ſimple, and the latter the moſt turbulent people in the world. Theſe adventurers therefore looked out for a new ſettlement, and at a ſmall diſtance found one of the propereſt places upon earth for their reception. This was the thick and vaſt foreſt of *Parnabacaba*, which overſpread all the mountains at the

back of this Captainſhip, and in this foreſt none but wild beaſts had hitherto taken up their dwelling. They ſoon cleared a part of this wilderneſs for their habitation, wherein they eſtabliſhed not only a new town, which they named *San Paulo*, but a new republic, in which they lived after the manner they liked beſt.

This was at firſt overlooked; for the country was judged of no great value, and the adjacent Captainſhips were pleaſed at getting rid of thoſe who reſorted thither. However, in the ſpace of a very few years they were too ſtrong to be dealt with; for receiving all ſorts of people, they quickly increaſed from two or three hundred to as many thouſand men, and being a bold, hardy, enterprizing and daring people, the Governors knew not how to deal with them. In the firſt place, they took care to fortify the avenues to their territory, which were naturally ſtrong; and they ſeldom ventured abroad, but in bodies of fourſcore or a hundred men; and in ſuch parties they frequently traverſed the whole extent of *Braſil*.

This new and extraordinary commonwealth, were denominated *Pauliſts*, from the city where they lived; they barely acknowledged the ſovereignty of the crown of *Portugal*, without ſubmitting to its juriſdiction; and as the tyranny of the Governors of *Braſil*, and the oppreſſion of the *Spaniſh* Governors in the adjacent provinces, furniſhed this new ſtate with abundance of members, it at laſt became very difficult to gain admittance among them.

They

They obliged ſuch as preſented themſelves upon their frontiers, which they were not allowed to enter, to ſubmit to a very ſtrict examination, that they might know whether they were fit for their community, and not ſpies, or perſons who intended to betray them; upon the bare ſuſpicion of which they made no ſcruple of beating out their brains; but if upon this examination, they judged they might prove uſeful members, they obliged them to bring in two ſlaves for their ſupport; aſſigning them a dwelling and plantation, by which they commenced *Pauliſts*, and were to continue ſo to the end of their lives, for any attempt to deſert was puniſhed with death without mercy. They made no exception of country or complexion; a ſavage was as welcome to them as an *European*, and every man after his admiſſion, was at liberty to lead what kind of life he liked beſt, provided he did not diſturb the peace of the ſociety.

Theſe people rejecting and deſpiſing the mandates of the court of *Portugal*, were often engaged in a ſtate of hoſtility with the *Portugueſe*; but the mountains ſurrounding their country, and the difficulty of clearing the few paſſages that opened into it, generally put it in their power to make their own terms; but as gold was found to abound in this province, the laſt King of *Portugal*, (during whoſe reign the diſcoveries of *Braſilian* gold and diamonds were begun and compleated) thought it incumbent on him to reduce this province, which now became of great conſequence, to the ſame ſubjection and obedience with the reſt of the country;

which he was at laſt ſo happy as to effect, and the city of *St. Paul* is now conſidered as the centre of the *Portugueſe* mines.

Having thus run through the ſeveral Captainſhips, and mentioned the produce and commodities of each, it will not be improper to take ſome notice of the government and the people in general.

The Viceroy has two councils in which he preſides, one of criminal and the other of civil affairs; but juſtice goes on very ſlowly, and there is not perhaps a country upon earth where ſo much paper is blotted by the lawyers, before any final judgment is obtained.

There is perhaps no part of the world, *China* and *Japan* excepted, where there is ſo much trouble in getting on ſhore, or ſo much difficulty in knowing how to act when a perſon is landed. The difficulties Commodore *Anſon* met with in this reſpect, will be mentioned in the account we ſhall hereafter lay before our readers of his voyage round the world. To give a juſt idea of the manner of their proceeding, it will not be unentertaining if we here preſent a ſhort abſtract from an account of a voyage to *Braſil*, by a *French* gentleman, publiſhed in the year 1717.

When they came within a league of the city of *St. Salvador*, they were reſtrained from proceeding any farther by a gun fired from a little fort: upon which they came to an anchor, and ſent their Supercargo aſhore in their boat. He was a very ſenſible man, and had withal a great deal of gravity, a quality of all others the moſt neceſſary,

neceſſary, for one who has any buſineſs to tranſact with the *Portugueſe*.

As ſoon as he landed, he was conducted to an audience of the Viceroy, who received him with great ſtate, and yet ſhewed him as much civility as he could expect. He told his Excellency, that he came on behalf of three *French* ſhips homeward bound from the *Eaſt-Indies*, that were greatly diſtreſſed, and had no hopes of performing their voyage without his protection and relief. The Viceroy, after continuing for ſome moments ſilent, replied, he was very ſorry for their misfortune, becauſe his maſter's orders were very preciſe againſt admitting any foreign veſſels into the port, and that the King had given him directions to ſeize and confiſcate without diſtinction, whatever foreign ſhips entered their harbour, unleſs it plainly appeared, that they were unable to keep the ſea; but that he would allow them twenty-four hours to conſider, whether they would come and anchor under the guns of the fort, in order to be examined, or put to ſea without receiving any relief at all; adding, that if the caſe was as he repreſented it, care ſhould be taken to aſſiſt and ſupply him: but that the *French* would do well to remember that the *Portugueſe* were not to be impoſed upon.

As the ſhips were really in a very bad condition; they had no reaſon to fear any examinations, they therefore on the return of the Supercargo came to an anchor under the fort, and the next day the Judge came on board, attended by ſeveral Secretaries and other officers, all of them people of great gravity, who examined every thing

thing with all the nicety and ſtrictneſs of an inquiſition. They called for their journals, queſtioned their pilots, mariners, and even cabbin-boys, whether they had not formed the deſign of touching *Braſil* before they were in ſuch diſtreſs. They all anſwered in the negative; but ſtill they had ſo little hopes, that every one in the ſhip who had it in his power, made them ſome preſent or other, which they received indeed, but ſcarce gave them thanks. At laſt, however, they took their leave, and ſent ſome carpenters on board, to whom the Captains made ſuch application, that they reported that the leaks were ſo dangerous, that the crews were afraid of ſinking before they could get out of the ſhips.

This report was no ſooner made, than they had leave to go on ſhore, and take lodgings where they thought fit in the city; but with ſtrict caution not to attempt any kind of trade on pain of forfeiting both the ſhips and cargoes. The officers put on board, at firſt talking the ſame language, but ſeeing the impreſſion it made, and that the *French* continued very exact in that particular, they on the third day told them, that this was all a farce; that the Judges themſelves conſidered it in that light, and that as they underſtood by their preſents that they were a good ſort of people, every night boats would come off with all ſorts of merchandize, and that they would take care the *French* ſhould run no riſk either in buying or ſelling. The boats came accordingly, and though the *French* were at firſt a little ſuſpicious, yet in a week's time, they and the *Portugueſe* perfectly underſtood each other,

other, and trade went on briſkly every night, as ſoon as it was dark.

The *French* now imagined, that they ſhould find no difficulty in procuring carpenters, and other workmen, if they paid them good wages; but they were miſtaken; for none of thoſe people durſt take their money till they had leave; which was not to be obtained, but by dint of preſents; theſe however being properly beſtowed, the carpenters came on board and began to work: for it is literally true, that in *Braſil*, money will do every thing, and that nothing is to be done there without it. They ſtaid there four months, and found few honeſt men except the Viceroy.

But to proceed: the inhabitants may be divided into three ſorts; planters, factors, and mariners. The former purchaſe as many ſlaves as they can employ in their ſugar and tobacco works, *&c.* and when the *Liſbon* fleet comes, ſend away their commodities, and receive an equivalent in *European* goods and manufactures, by the next year's fleet. The factors keep magazines of all ſorts of goods that come from *Portugal*, with which they purchaſe ſugar, tobacco, and gold, of ſuch planters as want an immediate ſupply of *European* goods, and cannot wait for the next year's fleet. As for the mariners, their chief buſineſs conſiſts in their making frequent trips to *Guinea* to purchaſe ſlaves. This trade is very conſiderable. Thoſe from the Bay of *All Saints* uſually bring over about 20,000 Negroes every year, and there is ſcarce a *Portugueſe* here, who has not at leaſt a dozen black ſlaves in his ſervice. The people are fond of ſhew and magnificence,

nificence, of rich cloaths, jewels, and a large train of ſervants, and to enjoy theſe, are very ſparing in the expences of their tables. They have however ſome feaſts; but theſe bring after them a long train of faſts: for every man has his guardian ſaint, upon whoſe anniverſary, he ſpends beſt part of his annual revenue; and ſeldom has a good dinner afterwards, except at his neighbour's upon the like occaſion.

The inland *Braſilians* of both ſexes ſtill go entirely naked; but near the ſhore they put on different ſorts of coverings, ſome wearing only ſhirts of linen or callico, and others dreſs after the *European* manner. The wives always follow their huſbands to war; but while the man carries nothing but his arms, the woman ſupplies the place of a ſumpter-horſe, and is loaded with ſuch proviſions as are thought neceſſary, with a child or children, and a hammock, which at night they hang on trees, or faſten to poles, making a defence from the rain with palm-tree leaves. Theſe hammocks are the chief part of their furniture, and are made of cotton, and formed like net-work, ſix or ſeven feet long and four broad: but the *Tapoyers* make theirs twelve or fourteen feet long, ſo as to contain four and ſometimes ſix perſons; their cans, cups or mugs, are made of callabaſhes, ſome of which hold thirty quarts. The poorer ſort uſe knives of ſtone, while the others purchaſe theirs of the *Europeans*.

When at home, the huſband generally goes abroad in the morning with his bow and arrows, to kill birds or beaſts, or goes to fiſh, while the wife either employs her time in working

ing at a plantation, or attends the huſband to bring home his game.

The *Braſilian* women are extremely fruitful, and have ſuch eaſy labours, that a woman immediately after her delivery, goes to the next river, where ſhe purifies herſelf by bathing; and there are ſome writers who ridiculouſly pretend, that the huſband goes to bed, and for the firſt twenty-four hours is nurſed with all the care and ceremony uſed with reſpect to a lying-in woman among *Europeans*. When a woman has conceived, ſhe abſtains from her huſband till after her delivery; nor is it uſual for her to cohabit with him while ſhe gives ſuck. The mothers lament the death of their children with loud lamentations for three or four days; and when friends have been long parted, they meet with open arms, tears, and all poſſible marks of affection.

They reckon up their age by laying by a cheſnut for every year, beginning the computation of their years with the riſing of a ſtar called *Taku*, or *the rain ſtar*. Royalty is diſtinguiſhed by the hair being cut in a particular form, and by the length of the thumb nails, which latter is an ornament entirely appropriated to the Kings; but *Nieuhoff* obſerves, that the Princes of the blood are allowed long nails on their fingers; but not on their thumbs.

The inland *Braſilians* have ſome knowledge of a Supreme Being, whom they call *Tuba*, which ſignifies *ſomewhat moſt excellent*; and the thunder they ſtile *Tubakununga*, which may be interpreted, *a noiſe made by the Supreme Excellency*.

lency. They have a confuſed knowledge of the general deluge, and believe that the whole race of mankind were extirpated by it, except one man and his ſiſter; which latter was pregnant before it happened, and that theſe by degrees repeopled the world. With reſpect to a ſtate of future exiſtence, they believed that the ſoul does not die with the body; but is tranſlated to ſome pleaſant vales beyond the mountains, where they are to enjoy great pleaſures, and ſpend their time in dancing and ſinging. Theſe are thoſe who have diſtinguiſhed themſelves by performing great actions, in defence of their country, *&c.* but ſuch as have been idle, are ſuppoſed to be tortured by evil ſpirits, whom they call by different names, and of whom they are exceſſively afraid; and though they pay them no religious worſhip, yet they ſometimes endeavour to appeaſe their wrath, by certain preſents faſtened to ſtakes, which they ſet in the ground. They have Prieſts among them, who are uſed as prophetic inſtructors, and are carefully conſulted in all material tranſactions, eſpecially thoſe of war: and there are people among the *Braſilians* called *Potiguaras*, accounted ſo well ſkilled in ſorcery, as to be able to kill their enemies by their enchantments.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

An Account of the Vegetables, Beaſts, Birds, and Reptiles found in Braſil.

IN deſcribing the produce of this country, we ſhall begin with the vegetables, and firſt mention the Mandioca root, to which the *Braſilians* are indebted for a great part of their ſubſiſtance; for being dried, powdered, and afterwards baked in the manner of bread, it ſerves for the common food of the inhabitants of a great part of *America*. This root ſomewhat reſembles a parſnip, and is about two or three feet in length, and of the thickneſs of a man's arm.—It has one peculiar quality, which is, that eaten freſh, it proves a mortal poiſon to the human ſpecies; but roaſted it is not attended with the leaſt ill conſequence; and though all kinds of beaſts will eat and grow fat upon it, yet its juice proves pernicious to them as well as to man

The Nara is alſo very remarkable; it reſembles the Sempervivum; but its leaves are not ſo thick, and are full of prickles. In the middle grows a fruit like a pine-apple, which in taſte reſembles a melon, but is much more delicious, and has a very fragrant ſmell. The juice is eſteemed good for the ſtone. This fruit is ſo very plentiful, that the *Indians* fatten their hogs with it; and, except ſome ſmall

quantities that are uſed for ſweatmeats, they have no other way for the common ſpending of them, but carrying them to ſea, where thoſe who are ſea-ſick receive great benefit from them.

The Pacoba, alſo called *Adam's* fig-tree, is very large; the ſtalks are ſoft and ſpungy, and the leaves very long, ſmooth, and ſoft like velvet; theſe are ſo cool and refreſhing, that people ſick of fevers have them applied to their bodies to abate the violent heat of the diſtemper, and give them eaſe. The fruit grows in cluſters like figs at every foot diſtance upon the main ſtalk, and one cluſter frequently contains two hundred. The fruit being gathered, and laid to ripen, becomes yellow; it then acquires a pleaſant taſte, and is not only grateful to the palate, but eſteemed medicinal, particularly in fevers and ſpitting of blood.

The Pocoaire is a ſhrub ten or twelve feet high, and has a ſtem much thicker than a man's thigh, and yet ſo tender, that it may be cut aſunder with a ſword at one ſtroke. The leaves reſemble thoſe of water-ſorrel; they are generally ſix feet long, and very broad, but are extremely thin, and have only one ſtrong middle rib to hold them together; on which account they are ſo torn by the winds blowing them about, that they hang in rags, and theſe ſhrubs at a diſtance appear as if ſtuck with feathers. The fruit, which has the name of Poco, is as long as a man's hands, and, both in colour and ſhape, are like a cucumber. In taſte they reſemble a fig, though they are much more delicate.

There are here alſo great plenty of ananas, or pine-apples, which, when ripe, are here of a gold colour, and diſcover themſelves to thoſe that walk in the woods, or the places where they grow, by their fine ſcent. In taſte, they excel our richeſt preſerved fruits; and the liquor drawn from them, is not inferior to *Malmſey* wine.

Some Authors mention a tree, which, if their accounts be true, is one of the moſt extraordinary in the world; it has very broad ſpreading branches, and grows wild in the woods. The thick branches of theſe trees have large holes, ſometimes as long as a man's arm, full of a clear well-taſted water, which when emptied fill again, and in this ſtate continue winter and ſummer; ſo that a whole troop of weary travellers may refreſh themſelves under one of theſe trees; repoſe in the cool ſhade, and at the ſame time quench their thirſt. The want of water being commonly one of the greateſt inconveniencies that can be ſuffered by thoſe who travel the inland parts of the country, it ſeems, as if Providence had kindly provided this remedy, by diſpoſing it up and down in ſuch quantities, and in a manner not expoſed to the uncertainties that attend ſprings and rivulets.

The country produces various ſorts of palm-trees, and other fruits, and alſo mulberries and dewberries; woods of various colours, and ſome which produce very fragrant ſcents; in particular the maſtick, which, with the reſt of

the odoriferous plants and ſhrubs, perfume the woods in the moſt agreeable mannner.

The Timbo, is a plant that ſprings up like a ſtring, and riſes up to the top of the higheſt mulberry-trees, to which it ſometimes grows cloſe like ivy. They are exceeding ſtrong and tough, and even thoſe as big as a man's leg, may be wound and twiſted about without breaking. But the bark is an infallible poiſon to the fiſh, and being thrown into the water, leaves hardly any of them alive.

The Bombaſine cotton ſhrubs, are found in great numbers in this country: they grow to an indifferent height, and the fruit when ripe, divides itſelf into four parts, each of which yields the cotton in flocks of the bigneſs of a little ball; and in the midſt of theſe flocks are black ſeeds, cloſely preſſed together.

The Mangaba-tree, is an evergreen, and bears fruit twice a year: its flowers are like thoſe of the jeſſamine, and ſmells as well: the fruit, which is as big as an apricot, is yellow, ſpotted with black, and has ſeveral kernels within; theſe are eaten as well as the fruit itſelf, and are wholeſome, well-taſted, and lie exceeding light on the ſtomach.

The Araca is a ſort of ſmall pear, or, at leaſt, it more nearly reſembles that than any other fruit: it is of red, yellow, or green colour; for there are of all theſe kinds in *Braſil*, and they are extremely plentiful. This fruit is very pleaſant, and is admired by thoſe who love but a ſmall taſte of the ſour.

The

The tree Jabaticaba, is remarkable for its being intirely beſet with fruit, from the very root to the topmoſt bough. This fruit is of of the ſize of a large lemon, it has a ſour taſte, and the *Indians* make a good wine of it.

The Cabueriba is a very large tree, and affords excellent timber for ſtrength and ſervice; but what renders it moſt valuable is the balm it affords, which, like that of *Gilead*, heals all green wounds. This is obtained by making an inciſion in the bark, through which the balm diſtils into a veſſel ſet to receive it. Both the balm and the tree itſelf, have a very fragrant ſmell.

The Cupayba is a ſtrait and tall tree, remarkable for its yielding, when cut, a great deal of oil, which ſerves both for lamps and the curing of wounds.

This country alſo produces many other trees and ſhrubs different from thoſe of *Europe*, and among the reſt, of the *Braſil*-tree, of which we have given a deſcription in a former chapter.

As to the beaſts, the Tapirouſſon ſomewhat reſembles a cow, in its ſhape and ſize, tho' in other reſpects it differs very much from it; it has long ſhaggy hair of a reddiſh colour, no horns, a very ſhort neck and tail, long hanging ears, ſlender legs, and a whole hoof: but tho' it has very ſharp teeth, it never makes uſe of them againſt man or beaſt. The natives ſometimes catch them in traps, and at others pierce them with arrows, not ſo much for the ſake of the fleſh, (though that is good, and

not much unlike beef) as for the hide, which, when dry, is in a manner impenetrable.

The Cuati is as grey as a badger, to which it has ſome reſemblance. Its claws and ſnout are very long, and by the help of the former it climbs the trees like a monkey. Theſe animals are ſo ravenous that there is no creature which is not an over-match for them, that eſcapes being devoured by them; though they chiefly live upon ſnakes, birds, and their eggs.

The Biarataca is like a ferret, but conſiderably larger, and has a remarkable croſs of white and grey along the back; this creature alſo makes great havock among the birds and their eggs; but though it has neither ſharp teeth, nor long claws, yet it is as able to preſerve itſelf from its purſuer, as any other beaſt of prey: for nature has given it the power of making ſuch an intollerable ſtink upon theſe occaſions, that both the men and dogs are almoſt poiſoned with it, and obliged to put an end to the chaſe.

The Apes and Monkeys are very numerous in this country, and are of ſeveral colours. Theſe are eſteemed pretty good food.

The wild Boars are of ſeveral ſorts, as are alſo the Leopards, Tygers, and Ounces: ſome of theſe laſt are black, others grey, and others ſpotted. No beaſt can be more furious. The boars will purſue a man to a tree, and ſtay for him there; but the Ounces will mount the treet, and get up after him. There is nothing they meet can be ſecure from their rage. They will aſſault whole troops of other animals at once,

ence, and break into the herds of ſwine, deſtroy the hen-houſes, and leave waſte and deſolation wherever they come. The killing one of them is reckoned a very glorious action among the *Indians*, and he that is ſo happy, has the honour of being eſteemed and reſpected ever after, as a hero.

One of the moſt extraordinary animals found in *Braſil* is the Porcupine, called by the *Braſilians* Kuandu. It is about the ſize of an ape; but inſtead of hair is covered with ſpikes of three or four fingers length, which this animal, when exaſperated, darts forth, as the common Porcupine does its quills, and that with ſuch violence as to wound, and frequently to kill a man. Its eyes are round, ſtaring, and as red as carbuncles; it has long whiſkers like a cat, and its feet reſemble thoſe of an ape; only it has but four fingers; the place for the thumb being vacant. This creature uſually ſleeps by day, and goes in ſearch of prey by night. It is extremely fond of fowl, and climbs up trees, though ſlowly, in order to devour them. The fleſh of this animal has no diſagreeable taſte, and is eaten roaſted by the inhabitants.

The Armadilla, or ſhield-hog, reſembles our hogs in ſize and ſhape, but is covered with ſcales like a ſhield, which on the back has ſeven partitions, and between each of theſe appears a dark brown ſkin. The head is very like that of other hogs, and has a ſharp noſe with which it grubs up the earth: its eyes are ſmall, and lie deep in the head; it has a ſmall ſharp tongue, and ſhort ears coloured of a dark brown,

brown, without hair or ſcales. This animal lives upon roots and all kinds of carrion, drinks a great deal, and is very fat. It is fond of marſhy places, but makes holes, in which it ſhelters itſelf under ground. Its fleſh is much admired.

The *Braſilian* Sluggard, ſo called from the ſlowneſs of his motion, it not being able to proceed a ſtone's throw in many days, is about the ſize of a fox. Its head is round, and its mouth, which bears a conſtant foam, is little and round: its teeth are ſmall and blunt: its noſe is black, high and ſmooth; its eyes are ſmall, black and heavy, and its body is covered with aſh coloured hair. It dwells upon trees, and lives upon their leaves, without ever taſting any drink; and is ſo much afraid of rain, that upon its approach, it hides itſelf. Though the limbs of this animal are extremely weak, and ſeem in a manner disjointed, yet it will take ſuch hold as is not eaſily unlooſed.

The Tamandua, or Ant-bear, thus named from its food, is of two ſorts, the great and the ſmall. The former, which is about the bigneſs of a middle ſized dog, has a round head, a long ſnout and no teeth. This animal catches ants by laying out its tongue, which, *Nieuhoff* ſays, is twenty-five and ſometimes thirty inches long, upon a dunghill, till his prey ſettle upon it, which they have no ſooner done, than he draws them into his mouth, and ſwallows them.

The ſmall one is about the ſize of a fox; on the fore feet it has four crooked claws; and

two

two broad black liſts run along its back. It is a very fierce creature: it graſps at every thing with its paws, and, upon being ſtruck with a ſtick, will ſit upright, and take hold of it with his mouth. It ſleeps all day, and at night goes in ſearch of its prey: but when it drinks, ſome of the water ſpouts through its noſtrils.

The Senembi, or land Crocodile, is very common in *Braſil*; but it ſeldom exceeds five feet in length. There are ſaid to be certain ſtones in its head, which being given by two drams at a time, prove an infallible remedy for the gravel. It can live two or three months without food, and affords fleſh as white and as good as a rabit.

Parrots are ſome of the moſt common birds of the country, for they fly together in large flocks and are killed by thouſands; notwithſtanding which, they are ſo numerous that thoſe killed are not to be miſſed: there are various ſorts of them, and all of them will talk with very little teaching except one ſpecies. Their colours are very beautiful and ſhining, and in many of them are moſt admirably mixed. The breaſt of ſome is as red as ſcarlet, and their bodies either yellow, green, or blue, but not without a little mixture of all theſe colours. Theſe never lay above two eggs at a time, and breed in the trunks of old trees, and about the rocks. Others, with all the former colours, have alſo a mixture of black and grey, and theſe breed in the houſes. Another ſpecies is black, ſprinkled with a little green, the eyes and beak are red, and the feet yellow. There is another

ſort

ſort whoſe body is all green; it has a yellow cap and collar, the head is adorned with a fine tuft of blue feathers, and the tail red, yellow, and green. But the parrot called the Tuin, is ſomething more ſingular, if not for its colours, yet for its ſize; for it is no bigger than a ſparrow, and yet is always talking and ſinging after its manner; and will ſkip into the boſom of the perſon who breeds it, and eat out of his mouth.

The Guiranheugeta is of the ſize of a goldfinch. Its back and wings are blue: its breaſt and belly yellow, and it has a diadem of the ſame coloured feathers upon its head. This is an admirable bird for the cage, for it has the notes of many other ſorts of birds, and makes ſuch a variety of changes and turnings in its ſinging, that it is a conſort of itſelf.

In *Braſil* there is a kind of Bats of the ſize of a crow: theſe have very ſharp teeth, and bite violently. They build their neſts in hollow trees and old walls.

There are here a kind of wild-geeſe, much like thoſe in *Europe*, only ſomewhat larger, and their feathers vary more in colour; but tho' they are water-fowls, they generally prove both fleſhy and well-taſted.

The Barn-bird has a very odd appearance, it having a bill of an aſtoniſhing length, and a crown of green and white feathers upon its head; one half of which, as well as half the neck, has no feathers at all. It is about the ſize of a ſtork, and, when ſkinned and boiled, proves tolerable food.

The

The Bill-bird is about the ſize of a wood-pidgeon, and has a ſaffron coloured crop about the neck, of three or four fingers in compaſs. Its bill, which is altogether as large as the whole body, is yellow without, and red within; and its feathers, which are yellow on the breaſt, and black on all the other parts, are tipped with red.

Braſil alſo produces many ſorts of wild-fowl, that differ but little from thoſe of *Europe*. Among the ſmall birds, the *Braſilian* humming-bird is the moſt ſingular; for though very ſmall, it makes a loud noiſe, and is of ſo variable a hue, that turn it which way you pleaſe, it changes its colour. Some of the *Braſilian* women hang one of theſe at each ear, in the manner of a pendant.

Among the various ſorts of ſerpents found here, is the rattle-ſnake, alſo common in the *Engliſh* ſettlements; but the moſt ſingular is the Guaku or Liboya, a ſerpent of a monſtrous ſize; ſome of them being, according to *Nieuhoff*, twenty, and others even thirty feet long. It is extremely voracious, and will leap out of the hedges upon men or beaſts. It is not however, ſo venomous as other ſerpents, and the fleſh is deemed tolerable food.

The Gekko is indeed of a moſt venomous nature, and its bite proves mortal, unleſs the part wounded be immediately cut off, or burnt with a hot iron. The poiſonous quality of this creature is particularly evinced, by the dreadful effects which proceed from an outward application of its urine, which, upon touching

touching the ſkin, cauſes a blackneſs and gangrene. The Curcuma root, which we call Turmeric, is deemed by the *Braſilians*, the moſt powerful remedy for this poiſon.

There are lizards in *Braſil* four feet in length, which the Negroes eat with ſafety.

Scorpions here alſo grow to a very large ſize, and their ſting is venomous.

Among the ſpiders, there is one ſort of a remarkable large ſize, generally found in dunghills, or the cavities of hollow trees, which weave webs like other ſpiders; if provoked, they wound with a ſting ſo ſmall, as to be ſcarcely viſible, and yet ſo venomous, that it raiſes a bluiſh ſwelling, that is very painful, and even mortal, if not prevented by a timely antidote.

7 AP 53

The End of the Third Volume.